

Index

Compiled by the Author

- Abdul Hamid, Sultan of Turkey: 188, 317
Aboukir (British cruiser): torpedoed (22 Sept 1914), 85-6; loss of, a cause of criticism of Churchill, 143, 184-5, 532
Abruzzi, Duke of: commands Italian navy, 423
Achi Baba (Gallipoli Peninsula): Hamilton decides to land south of, 393; Hamilton's army fails to reach summit of (25-26 April 1915), 407; Hamilton confident that his forces will reach, in May, 411, 413; renewed offensive towards (6-9 May 1915), 414; remains in Turkish hands (May 1915), 415, 431; Churchill learns of failure of ships' fire against, 687; MAPS, 403, 519
Achnasheen (Ross and Cromarty): mystery of a searchlight at, 82-3
Adamant (British submarine Depot Ship): Fisher wants returned to home waters from Dardanelles (28 March 1915), 378
Adana (Turkey): possible area of post-war Italian influence, 244; MAP, 838
Addison, Dr Christopher: Churchill clashes with (Sept 1915), 540; records breakfast discussion between Lloyd George, Churchill and Reading (1 Aug 1916), 797; becomes Minister of Munitions (Dec 1916), 822
Adeane, Henry Robert Augustus: killed in action, 228
Aden: American consul at, drowned at sea, 688n
Admiral Farragut (British monitor): to go to Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 423; at the Dardanelles (Nov 1915), 687
Admiralty, the: Churchill becomes First Lord of (1911), 1; his policy at, 2; conference (25 July 1914) postponed, 4-5; communiqué about Fleet concentration issued from, 7; defensive preparations of (27 July 1914), 8; further preparations of (29 July 1914), 11; Staff meeting at (30 July 1914), 13; relations with War Office, 21, 36, 226; visit of F. E. Smith and Sir Max Aitken to (1 Aug 1914), 24; urged by *Manchester Guardian* to 'trust the people', 38; confident of ability to prevent invasion, 57; purchases flying boats from United States (Nov 1914), 66; conference on aircraft production at (16 Sept 1914), 80; Court of Inquiry on sinking of *Aboukir*, *Cressy* and *Hogue*, 85-6; rubber manufacturers summoned to, 86; 'without a head', 117; tries to reassure War Office that a German invasion can be successfully challenged, 139; special intelligence branch set up at (8 Nov 1914), 179; merchant shipping policy of criticized by Bonar Law (Feb 1915), 282-4; intercepts German messages about shortage of ammunition at the Dardanelles, 337; Fisher in charge of, during Churchill's absence in France (6-10 May 1915), 419; Churchill learns that he must leave (17 May 1915), 447; Churchill appeals to Asquith to allow him to stay at (20 May 1915), 458; Churchill's last day at (26 May 1915), 470; Churchill speech (5 June 1915) defending his work at, 488-91; and the origin of the tank, 536-8; Churchill sees possibility

Admiralty, the—*continued*

of returning to (Dec 1915), 622; Churchill criticizes 'feeble pace' of, under Balfour (Feb 1916), 662; Churchill criticizes Balfour's administration of (March 1916), 716-22; and the proposed publication of the Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 784; Churchill urges greater efforts in new naval construction upon (July 1916), 797; Carson becomes First Lord of (Dec 1916), 823

Admiralty Board: Churchill informs of anti-aircraft and anti-airship needs, 66; Captain Richmond critical of, 110; Asquith not very trustful of, 117; Churchill alleged to be overruling advice of, 144; Asquith describes as 'incapable of initiative' under Prince Louis, 151-2; Churchill urges Balfour to bring Fisher back to (March 1916), 721-2

Admiralty War Group: composition of (Nov 1914), 185-6; summoned to discuss possible attack on Dardanelles (3 Jan 1915), 233; examines Churchill's plan for a North Sea offensive (4 Jan 1915), 236; plans Dardanelles attack with battleships surplus to Jellicoe's fleet, 249; discusses (12 Jan 1915) Carden's proposals for attack on Dardanelles, 250; Dardanelles plans examined by, 255; discusses (11 March 1915) Sir H. Jackson's appeal for troops to participate in Dardanelles attack, 336-7; discusses Hamilton—de Robeck decision to postpone second naval attack until 14 April 1915, 364; Churchill holds back Dardanelles reinforcement proposals from, until Fisher can approve them, 437

Adrianople (Turkey): Churchill wants Grey to offer, to Bulgaria, 210-11; Turks sending troops against Russia from, 232; railway to (from Constantinople), exposed to attack by sea, 249; Lloyd George suggests joint Anglo-Bulgarian attack on, 273; Churchill wants the surrender of, as a condi-

Adrianople (Turkey)—*continued*

tion of peace with Turkey, 315; Churchill proposes cutting of railway between Constantinople and, 323, 544; MAPS, 545, 838, 840

Adriatic Sea: approaches watched by British ships, 26; French blockade of, 46; Hankey proposes Serbian port on, 230; proposed British naval action in, 252-3, 255; Austrian submarines in, 272; Italy wants control of Austrian coastline of, 395; Churchill suggests submarine net across the mouth of, 471; MAPS, 29, 842

Adventure (British light cruiser): takes Churchill to Dunkirk, 92

Advertiser, The (Dundee): on Churchill's 'highest good humour' (18 May 1915), 454-5

Aegean Sea: *Goeben* reaches, 41; Graeco-Turkish rivalry in, 191; Turkish torpedo boat prevented from entering (27 Sept 1914), 212; British troops being assembled in, 304; fear of German submarines in, 390; MAPS, 29, 235, 545, 838, 840, 842

Afghanistan: probable effect of a British victory at the Dardanelles on, 349; possibility of Turkish activity in, 686

Africa: Churchill wants greater use of troops from (May 1916), 772-3, 794

Agadir (Morocco): crisis at (1911), 1, 63, 114, 462

Agamemnon: Churchill seen as casting himself in the heroic rôle of, 132

Agamemnon (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*, 266; at Dardanelles, 300, 331; needing repair, 379; Churchill rejects Fisher's attempt to impose restrictions on de Robeck's use of, 388; Fisher recalls that despatch of, to Dardanelles was his own idea, 394; MAP (18 March 1915), 353

Agincourt, battle of (1415): Churchill believes 'glories of' revived in 1914, 141

Ahwaz (Persia): Government of India occupies oilfields near (Nov 1914), 221. MAP, 839

- Air Board: *see* Air Department
- Air Department (*or* Air Ministry, *or* Air Board): Churchill proposes establishment of (June 1915), 501; Churchill wishes he had been appointed to, 686; Churchill tantalized by possibility of appointment to, 690; the *Observer* advocates Churchill's appointment to (Feb 1916), 702-3; Curzon said to be the future head of (Feb 1916), 705; Billing asserts need for, in House of Commons (March 1916), 744; Churchill speaks on, in House of Commons (17 May 1916), 763, 767-70; Churchill attends meeting of, 777; Lloyd George and the suggestion of Churchill as head of (Dec 1916), 822
- Aircraft Manufacturing Company: Churchill buys American flying boats from, 66*n*
- Air Ministry (possibility of): *see* Air Department
- Aisne, River (France): British troops to move from (Sept 1914), 81; MAP, 54
- Aitken, Allan Anderson: joins Royal Naval Division, 48
- Aitken, Sir William Maxwell: and possible Coalition on eve of war, 13; plays Bridge at Admiralty (1 Aug 1914), 24-5; seeks place for brother in Royal Naval Division, 48; quotes Asquith letter critical of Churchill (22 Sept 1914), 90; Churchill defends visits to France to, 425*n*; recalls Churchill's mood of 18 May 1915, 455; takes letter from Churchill to Bonar Law (21 May 1915), 463*n*; and Churchill's departure for the front (Nov 1915), 571; Churchill moves into St Omer headquarters of (Dec 1915), 620, 627; Churchill urges his wife to keep in touch with Bonar Law through, 688, 750; Lloyd George, Bonar Law, F. E. Smith and Churchill meet at St Omer headquarters of, 697; advises Churchill to stay in London and criticize the Government (March 1916), 734, 744; Churchill complains to, about Bonar Law's 'personal' attacks in Parliament (Aug 1916), 800; and Lloyd George's emergence as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 819, 821-2
- Aix-la-Chapelle (Aachen, Germany): Churchill proposes air raid on (25 Sept 1914), 91
- Akaba (Turkey): Admiral Slade advises naval action against (31 Oct 1914), 215; *Minerva* sails to, 216; British naval bombardment of, 217, 219; MAP, 838
- Albania: 230; Italy wants control over, 395; MAPS, 235, 545, 842
- Albert Ballin (B. Huldermann): quoted, on Churchill and the coming of war, 5
- Albert, King of the Belgians: and the defence of Antwerp (Oct 1914), 104, 106-7, 113, 116, 125, 650*n*
- Albion (British battleship): on way to Dardanelles, 265; at Dardanelles, 331, 361*n*; at Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 405; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Aleppo (Turkey): 344; Kitchener advocates annexation of (16 March 1915), 349; MAP, 839
- Alexandretta (Turkey): possibility of feints at, 200; Turkish gunboats reported proceeding from (28 Oct 1914), 214; British sailors blow up railway trains and stores at (18-21 Dec 1914), 222-3, 233, 279; Fisher wants feint at, 234; Fisher approves capture of, 245; French desire for, 266; French naval command extended to, 267; and possibility of British seizure of, 267-8; Asquith and Kitchener favour annexation of, 332; Lloyd George prepared, to give to France to avoid a quarrel, 333; Kitchener prefers to Palestine for ultimate British control, 344; Hankey critical of failure to have a feint at, during Dardanelles attack, 345; Kitchener advocates annexation of (16 March 1915), 349; proposed extension of British sovereignty from Persian Gulf to, 509; Kitchener proposes an attack on (Nov 1914), 602; MAPS, 235, 838

- Alexandria (Egypt): Turkish gunboats to be intercepted at, 215; Churchill wants troop transports assembled at, 220, 292; mistakes in loading of ships discovered at, 297; British troop transports arriving at, 324, 346; Jack Churchill on way to, 371; Kitchener threatens to withdraw Gallipoli troops to, if *Queen Elizabeth* leaves the Dardanelles, 423; Churchill wants Dardanelles troop reinforcements assembled at (June 1915), 497; MAP, 838
- Algeria: 17; MAP, 29
- Alsace-Lorraine: Haldane cites German failure to crush nationality of, after 1871, as evidence of need to avoid a punitive peace, 355
- Ameland (Dutch island): possible British base, 19, 21; Churchill proposes naval attack on, 37; MAP, 19
- Amiens (France): British Expeditionary Force reaches (14 Aug 1914), 47; *The Times* report from (30 Aug 1914), 70; MAP, 54
- Amphion* (British light cruiser): sunk (6 Aug 1914), 38
- Amrum Light (off Schleweig-Holstein): Fisher on need to lay mines at, 187
- Amsterdam (Holland): Fisher urges massive British troop landings at (Jan 1915), 245
- Anafarta Hills (Gallipoli Peninsula): allied failure to reach (Aug 1915), 518, 520-1; MAP, 519
- Anatolia (Turkey): Djemal Pasha records fear of allied advance through, 212; British keep watch for transfer of troops to Sinai from, 222; railway into (from Haydarpasha), exposed to attack from the sea, 249; seen as only part of Turkish Empire likely to remain Turkish after the war, 344; Italy wants control of southern coast of, 395; MAP, 838-9
- Ancona* (Italian steamship): torpedoed (7 Nov 1915), 463*n*
- Anglo-Portuguese Alliance (1386): 7*n*
- Antwerp (Belgium): Royal Naval Air Service base at (Sept 1914), 89, 91, 438
- Antwerp (Belgium)—*continued*
114, 122-4; problems of the defence of, 96-104; Churchill's mission to (4-6 Oct 1914), 106-19; final stages of siege of, 120-2; surrender of, 124; criticisms of Churchill's actions at, 126-34, 137, 140, 143; Churchill recalls 'crack of their shells' at, 135; little chance of recapturing, 136; effect on Churchill of battle at, 161; expedition to, criticized in Parliament, 169-70, 177; the fall of, 'a cause of real sadness' to Churchill, 180; Fisher wants British troops landed at (9 Jan 1915), 245; Churchill warns Asquith of similar disaster if help to Serbia further delayed, 278; de Robeck explains misleading analogy between Dardanelles forts and, 376; H. A. Gwynne claims Churchill's actions at, demonstrate 'same ignorance of strategic and tactical principles' as at Dardanelles, 398-9; Churchill wants Asquith to publish documents concerning, 531-2, 533; Churchill defends his policy at, in *Sunday Pictorial* (Nov 1916), 817; MAP, 99
- Anzac Cove (Gallipoli Peninsula): 407; MAP, 403
- Aquitania* (British troopship): 'a serious risk' sending to Dardanelles, 262
- Arabia: Limpus suggests British action against Turkey in, 198; Grey favours setting up an independent Arab State in, 355; MAP, 839
- Arabic* (British passenger liner): torpedoed (19 Aug 1915), 463*n*
- Archangel (Russia): possibility of transfer of Russian troops to Ostend from (28 Aug 1914), 58; possibility of transfer of Russian troops to Gallipoli from, 205, 428; Russia increasingly dependent upon, after closure of Dardanelles, 213; Hankey suggests sending Churchill on mission to (Oct 1915), 560-1, 611*n*
- Archway House (London): Fisher not to be found at (15 May 1915), 438

- Arethusa* (British light cruiser): damaged (28 Aug 1914), 59
- Ari Burnu (Gallipoli Peninsula): military landings at (25 April 1915), 402, 404, 407; MAP, 403
- Ark Royal* (British Seaplane Carrier): to go to Dardanelles, 257
- Armenia (Turkey): possible area of post-war Russian control, 344; MAP, 839
- Armentières (France): Royal Naval Air Service reconnaissance over (4 Sept 1914), 65, 68; Norman Leslie killed in action at (18 Oct 1914), 140; Churchill and Sir Archibald Sinclair photographed in (11 Feb 1916), 664; Churchill gives his battalion officers a farewell lunch in (6 May 1916), 760; MAPS, 75, 631, 649
- Armoured motor-cars: sent to France (Sept 1914), 67, 74; Sir J. French sees little value in (Nov 1914), 163; Churchill and Kitchener quarrel bitterly over use of (Feb 1915), 189-191
- Armstrong, Whitworth: and arms for Antwerp, 100; and building of Turkish dockyard facilities, 190-1; instructed to prevent Turkish Admiral hoisting his flag on *Sultan Osman*, 192
- Arras (France): battle at (9 May 1915), 523; Churchill visits French front line near (5 Dec 1915), 597; Churchill urges Parliament (23 May 1916) not to repeat battle errors of, 774; MAP, 575
- Arthur, Sir George Compton Archibald: Churchill clashes with, over rôle of Kitchener at the time of the Dardanelles, 817-19
- Ashton-Gwatkin, Frank Trelawny Arthur: recalls story of Cabinet discussion on Japan, 43
- Askold* (Russian light cruiser): at Dardanelles, 327
- Aspinall, Cecil Faber: at Suvla Bay (8 Aug 1915), 518; his reflections on the failure at Suvla Bay, 522*n*
- Asquith, Arthur Melland (Oc): on his way to Antwerp, 112, 116, 117; his experiences at Antwerp, 130-1;
- Asquith, Arthur Melland (Oc)—*continued*
 departs for Dardanelles, 305-6; wounded at the Dardanelles, 415
- Asquith, Emma Alice Margaret (Margot): records Lloyd George's recollections of Churchill's mood at outbreak of war, 31; on the attempt to keep the loss of the *Audacious* secret, 142-3; on Prince Louis' failings as First Lord, 148; Fisher dances with, 155; reflects on Churchill's career and qualities, 179-80; hopes Turks 'will be wiped out of Europe', 219; discusses 'ambition' with Churchill, 245-6; Asquith describes quarrel between Churchill and Kitchener to, 289; her account of the Blandford review (25 Feb 1915), 305-6; discusses Churchill's character with Asquith, 329-30; reports Asquith's reaction to alleged intrigue (21 March 1915), 361; warns Lloyd George of Balfour's hostility, 372; tells Fisher he has 'talked too much' about his hostility to the Dardanelles (13 May 1915), 426; on Churchill and the new Coalition (24 May 1915), 466; and the concerted ministerial attack on Kitchener (Oct 1915), 556-7, 560; and Churchill's departure for the trenches (Nov 1915), 571; Clementine Churchill has tea with (7 Jan 1916), 681; said to have declared 'Nothing but God Almighty himself will drive Herbert out of Downing Street', 699; and Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 709, 712-13, 729; begs F. E. Smith to urge Churchill to return to the trenches (March 1916), 736
- Asquith, Herbert Henry: sends Churchill to Admiralty (1911), 1; informs King George V of European crisis (25 July 1914), 4, and of British intention to challenge German aggression, 7; approves Admiralty measures (27 July 1914), 8; approves sending Fleet to North Sea, 9; Churchill urges royal conference upon, 10; Secretary of

Asquith, Herbert Henry—*continued*

State for War, 12; supports Churchill's preparations (30 July 1914), 18; and plans for an offensive against Germany, 20-1; lunches at Admiralty (31 July 1914), 21-2; describes mood at Cabinet (1 Aug 1914), 23; authorizes full naval mobilization (1 Aug 1914), 25; authorizes military mobilization (2 Aug 1914), 26; approves Anglo-French naval co-operation (3 Aug 1914), 27; and Kitchener's appointment as Secretary of State for War, 28; and the chase of the *Goeben*, 29-30; critical of Marine expedition to Ostend, 56; and Churchill's conscription proposal (26 Aug 1914), 57; calls emergency meeting of Ministers (31 Aug 1914), 60; speaks at Guildhall (4 Sept 1914), 62; praises Churchill, 64; asks Churchill to draft Press communiqués, 70-1; Churchill dines with, 72; puts forward Amending Bill on Home Rule, 77-80; approves Churchill's visit to Sir J. French in France, 80; does not wish publicity on cause of sinking of *Aboukir*, *Cressy* and *Hogue*, 86; critical of Churchill's absence in France (22 Sept 1914), 90; relations with Churchill referred to, by Clementine Churchill, 92; advises Churchill to lay mines in North Sea, 93; sees Churchill at work, 95; and defence of Antwerp, 98, 101-3, 106, 111-14, 116-17, 120-2, 124; and criticisms of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127, 130-1, 132, 180; reports on Churchill-Kitchener disagreement about invasion, 138-9; praises Churchill's attitude in Cabinet (23 Oct 1914), 139; and sinking of *Audacious*, 141-2; sends Churchill to mediate between Lloyd George and Kitchener, 143; approves of replacement of Prince Louis as First Lord by Fisher, 147, 149; George V protests to about Fisher's appointment as First Lord, 150-2; Churchill reports 'Fisher is already a Court Favourite' to, 153; on battle off Coronel, 158-9; and

Asquith, Herbert Henry—*continued*

Churchill's proposed sixth wartime visit to France (Dec 1914), 164-7; answers Bonar Law's criticisms of Antwerp, 169; convenes first War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; describes faces of colleagues, 176*n*; told of all-important intercepted German naval telegrams, 179; A. K. Wilson describes himself as 'Fisher's slave' to, 186; and pre-war Turkish policy, 189; and Turkish 'double game' (17 Aug 1914), 195; reports Cabinet decision to sink Turkish ships coming out of Dardanelles, 204; on warning to Turks 'to keep quiet', 205; tells George V of Britain's need to take hostile measures against Turks, 211; tells George V Britain will not take initiative against Turks, 215; believes Constantinople should be ruled by Russia, 216; does not regard war with Turkey with alarm, 219; 'altogether opposed' to attack on Gallipoli and Dardanelles (5 Dec 1914), 223; Churchill proposes North Sea offensive to (29 Dec 1914), 225-6; describes the war as 'an enormous waste of life and money' (29 Dec 1914), 228; receives plans for alternate war zone from Churchill and Lloyd George, 228-9; Churchill asks for memorandum from, 231; dines at Admiralty House, 238; informs Venetia Stanley of code-name for attack on German island of Borkum, 242; at War Council (8 Jan 1915), 244; at Walmer Castle, 246; Churchill sends Dardanelles plans to (12 Jan 1915), 250; and planning of Dardanelles operation, 256; upholds Churchill's ministerial authority, 265; Fisher protests to, 268-9; mediates between Churchill and Fisher, 270; at War Council (28 Jan 1915), 271-2, 275; Lloyd George critical of, 277; Churchill critical of, 278; explains importance of success at Dardanelles (9 Feb 1915), 280; favours British troops at Salonika, 282; Churchill proposes

Asquith, Herbert Henry—continued

wartime nationalization of British mercantile marine to (13 Feb 1915), 284; Churchill proposes tax on war profits to (5 March 1915), 285; informs Venetia Stanley of secret telegram from Dardanelles, 286; at War Council (16 Feb 1915), 288; caught up in quarrel between Churchill and Kitchener (17-19 Feb 1915), 289-91; tells War Council (19 Feb 1915) Serbia could best be helped by 'a big blow at the Dardanelles', 293; hopeful about outcome of naval bombardment (20 Feb 1915), 300; asks whether Anzac troops 'were good enough', 303; asserts importance of forcing the Dardanelles, 304; Churchill urges need for 115,000 troops at Dardanelles on, 306-7; supports Churchill's plea for a minimum of 85,000 troops at the Dardanelles, 309; annoyed by Churchill's 'noisy, rhetorical, tactless' mood, 310; describes Churchill as 'breast high about the Dardanelles' (1 March 1915), 316; believes Sir Ian Hamilton has 'too much feather in his brain', 325; describes Churchill (7 March 1915) as 'the most disliked man in my Cabinet', 329; describes Churchill as 'intolerable', 330; wants Britain to have 'a substantial share of the carcass of the Turk', 332; ends digression at War Council (10 March 1915), 334; unwilling 'to treat Tories as equals' (Churchill in 1928), 335; and Sir Ian Hamilton's departure for the Dardanelles, 338; reports (13 March 1915) differing Cabinet views on Palestine and the Jews, 343-4; asks at War Council (19 March 1915) whether plans exist for a military landing at Gallipoli, 355; believes War Council would not be doing its 'duty' if it took no Turkish territory, 356; and rumours of intrigues against him (end March 1915), 361-3; supports Churchill's desire for a renewed naval attack at the Dardanelles, 366, 367, 370; does

Asquith, Herbert Henry—continued

not call War Council to discuss the need for a military landing on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 381; tells France and Russia that Dardanelles attack 'will be pressed to a decision' (3 April 1915), 383; and decision to proceed with military landings on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 386; sets up Committee to examine British territorial needs in Turkey, 391; and Fisher's opposition to the Dardanelles, 394; worried about setback at Dardanelles influencing Italy's decision to join the Allies, 395; receives news (15 April 1915) of dissension among Young Turks in Constantinople, 395-6; answers critics of Dardanelles operation in House of Commons (22 April 1915), 398; and the Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 410; and Lord Charles Beresford's criticisms in House of Commons (4 May 1915), 413; Hankey passes on Fisher's resignation message to (11 May 1915), 420; agrees that no 'separate naval action' will take place at Dardanelles without Fisher's approval (11 May 1915), 420, 423; Fisher sends his memorandum of dissent about the Dardanelles to (12 May 1915), 421; Fisher sends further protest about Dardanelles to (13 May 1915), 424; defends Churchill's ninth visit to France in House of Commons (12 May 1915), 424-5; receives threat of resignation from Fisher (13 May 1915), 427; and Fisher's resignation (15 May 1915), 438-43; Churchill visits at Sutton Courtenay (16 May 1915), 444-5; unwilling to fight for the preservation of his Liberal administration (17 May 1915), 446; accepts a Coalition with the Conservatives, 447; and Churchill's Cabinet post in the new Coalition, 448, 449, 450-1; and Fisher's six conditions under which he promises to 'guarantee the successful termination of the war' (19 May 1915), 452-3; Sir Arthur Wilson

Asquith, Herbert Henry—*continued*

informs (19 May 1915) that he will serve under no other First Lord but Churchill, 457–8; Clementine Churchill appeals to (20 May 1915), 459; asked not to make Churchill Colonial Secretary (20 May 1915), 460; Churchill's appeal to remain as First Lord (21 May 1915), 463–4; informs Churchill that he cannot remain at Admiralty, 464, 465; reported as saying (22 May 1915) that Fisher 'ought to be shot for leaving his post', 467; offers Churchill Chancellorship of the Duchy of Lancaster, 468; and the formation of the Coalition (May 1915), 469–70; and the political crisis of May 1915, 475–81; reports the decision to reinforce Hamilton's army at the Dardanelles (9 June 1915), 494; seems well-disposed to Churchill (June 1915), 495–6; does not agree to Churchill's suggestion to set up an Air Department (June 1915), 501, 769–70; reports to George V (1 July 1915) about Cabinet discussions on Bulgaria, 506; Churchill protests to, about Fisher's appointment to the Board of Inventions and Research (July 1915), 506–8; and Churchill's proposed visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 510–13; Churchill seeks information about Gallipoli reinforcements from, 522; Churchill urges renewed naval attack to (21 Aug 1915), 524; at Calais Conference (July 1915), 526–7; and Cabinet views on conscription (Sept 1915), 529; and Churchill's desire to take up a military command (Sept 1915), 530; and Churchill's desire for publication of Admiralty documents, 531–3; and the origin of the tank, 533; and the setting up of a smaller war policy committee (Sept–Nov 1915), 542, 559–62; Churchill urges new war policies on (Oct 1915), 543–4; and the future of the Gallipoli expedition, 547–51; and the ministerial attempt

Asquith, Herbert Henry—*continued*

to remove Kitchener from the Dardanelles Committee, 556–60; Churchill sends letter of resignation to (30 Oct 1915), 561–2; Churchill sends second letter of resignation to (11 Nov 1915), 563–4; and possibility of Churchill commanding the forces in East Africa (Nov 1915), 565–6; replies to Churchill's resignation speech (15 Nov 1915), 568; seems to Churchill like a mandarin 'of some remote province of China' (27 Nov 1915), 587; Clementine Churchill sees (3 Dec 1915), 595; and Sir John French's dismissal (Dec 1915), 596; his sentiments 'always governed by his interests' (Churchill, 4 Dec 1915), 597; tries to delay Kitchener's return to England (Nov 1915), 601–2; Churchill describes as 'odious', 607; Churchill believes the hour of his punishment 'draws nearer', 608; Churchill sees himself as having 'to procure the dismissal' of, 611; refuses to allow Churchill to command a Brigade, 611–14; Churchill's growing bitterness against, 616–17, 626–7; Clementine Churchill the guest of (13 Feb 1916), 665–6; Lady Randolph Churchill dines with (2 Feb 1916), 668; Churchill's criticisms of (Jan 1916), 679–80; reported to have asked after Churchill 'with compunction' (7 Jan 1916), 681; Churchill and his wife disagree over, 682–4, 687–90, 699; Churchill describes as 'stronger than ever' (25 Jan 1916), 691; his removal discussed by Lloyd George, Bonar Law, F. E. Smith and Churchill at St Omer (31 Jan 1916), 697–8; talks to Fisher in the House of Commons (23 Jan 1916), 700; growing political discontent with (Feb 1916), 703–5, 708, Churchill writes to, about the tank, 706; and Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 709–14, 719, 722, 725, 729, 730–1; and Churchill's continuing

Asquith, Herbert Henry—*continued*

criticisms of his Government (March–April 1916), 734–5, 736, 739, 741, 750, 752–3; and the renewed conscription crisis (April 1916), 755–8, 761; Churchill speaks in House of Commons as principal opposition speaker to (23 May 1916), 770; and Churchill's request to publish the documents about the Dardanelles (June 1916), 777–9, 782–5; and Kitchener's successor at the War Office (June 1916), 781; Churchill protests to, against decision not to publish Dardanelles documents, 785–6; Churchill describes as 'supine, sodden and supreme' (15 July 1916), 787; agrees only to set up Commission of Inquiry on Dardanelles, but *not* to publication of documents, 789–90; Churchill critical of his failure to give the House of Commons a full picture of the war (July 1916), 793; Lloyd George, Churchill, Reading and Addison discuss possible resignation of (Aug 1916), 797; Churchill describes his position as 'not at all good' (13 Aug 1916), 798; and the Special Register Bill (Aug 1916), 799–800; refuses to allow Churchill full access to War Council notes (Aug 1916), 805; Churchill intends to show his Dardanelles statement to, in advance (Sept 1916), 808; and Churchill's attempt to stop the premature use of the 'tank' (Sept 1916), 810; informed of alleged Lloyd George–Churchill–F. E. Smith–Sir J. French intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Oct 1916), 811; and Churchill's criticisms of Grey's evidence to the Dardanelles Commission, 814; and his replacement by Lloyd George (Dec 1916), 819–23; his changing attitude towards Churchill, 825

Asquith, Raymond: Churchill visits in reserve billets (Nov 1915), 580, 607

Asquith, Violet: recalls relations between Churchill and Fisher, 263; recalls Churchill's 'joy' at the promise of

Asquith, Violet—*continued*

Greek military help at the Dardanelles (1 March 1915), 315–16; and the death of Rupert Brooke, 401–2; and Churchill's resignation (Nov 1915), 566, 570, 571; marries Maurice Bonham Carter (30 Nov 1915), 594, 595, 602; (*see henceforth* Bonham Carter, Violet)

Aston, Sir George Grey: and British plans against Germany (1913–14), 20; commands Marine Brigade at Ostend (Aug 1914), 56; falls ill (Sept 1914), 73

Atatürk, Kemal, *see* Kemal, Mustafa

Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fé Railway:

Churchill owns \$10,000 bonds of, 511*n*

Athens (Greece): 205; Churchill willing to go on special mission to (July 1915), 512; MAPS, 838, 842

Aubers Ridge (France): Churchill watches unsuccessful attack on (9 May 1915), 416; Repington blames failure at, on shortage of high-explosive shells, 430; MAP, 575

Audacious (British battleship): sunk by German mine (27 Oct 1914), 141–2; sinking of, kept secret, 144, 214; loss of, impairs British naval margin, 268

Augagneur, Victor: and French naval participation at the Dardanelles, 256–7, 266–7; sends further battleship to the Dardanelles to replace the *Bowet*, 354

Austerlitz (battle of, 1805): Napoleon defeats Russians at, 389*n*

Australia (Australian battle cruiser): 385

Australian and New Zealand Army Corps (ANZAC): fears for safe transit of, 206; War Council agrees to send to Dardanelles (16 Feb 1915), 288; Kitchener wants at Dardanelles instead of 29th Division, 291; Churchill insists will, require 'a stiffening of regulars', 292; Kitchener considers 'sufficient at first' for an attack on Gallipoli, 293; preparations for sending to Gallipoli, 296; Kitchener believes good enough for 'a cruise in the Sea of Marmora' (24 Feb 1915),

- Australian and New Zealand Army Corps (ANZAC)—*continued*
 303; being assembled in readiness for Dardanelles, 304, 316; at the Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 407; slight advances of (to 29 April 1915), 412; further slight gains (3 May 1915), 413; joins renewed offensive at Helles (6–9 May 1915), 415; and evacuation of Anzac area (Dec 1915), 619; Jack Churchill on headquarters staff of, in France (June 1916), 783
- Austria-Hungary: and the crisis of July 1914, 2–3; ultimatum to Serbia, 4, 6; Germany prepared to defend against Russia, 5; British warning to, 7; Balfour about to visit on eve of war, 17; false news of war with Britain, 41; Britain declares war on (12 Aug 1914), 45; Churchill establishes blockade of, 46–7; possibility of uniting Balkan States against, 200–2, 210; occupies Belgrade (1 Dec 1914) but driven from (14 Dec 1914), 224; Lloyd George's repeated proposals for an attack on, 229, 243, 252; proposed dismemberment of, 230; Kitchener deprecates attack on, 244; War Council discuss defence of Serbia against, 273–4; imminence of attack on Serbia by (Feb 1915), 278, 280; Mark Sykes on need to mobilize Balkan States against, 317–18; Hankey favours offensive against by means of British naval attack up the Danube (1 March 1915), 318; Churchill sees capture of Constantinople as prelude to defeat of, 331; hardship in (June–July 1915), 504; attacks Rumania (1 Sept 1916), 797; Churchill asserts importance of concentrating on the destruction of (Aug 1916), 799; MAPS, 29, 545
- Avonmouth (Gloucestershire): 402
- Babington, John Tremayne: in air raid on Friedrichshafen (21 Nov 1914), 172
- Bacchantes* (class of British cruiser): patrolling Dogger Bank (Sept 1914), 85–6
- Bacon, Reginald Hugh Spencer: 290, 392; and the origin of the tank, 535
- Bad-Nauheim (Germany): Fisher's daughter and son-in-law prisoners at (Oct 1914), 146
- Bagdad (Turkey): British forces fail to capture (Nov 1915), 590; Churchill forecasts (Dec 1915) disaster in future fighting at, 598, 600; Churchill advocates perseverance in attack on, 603, 605; MAP, 839
- Bailey, Sir Abe: Mrs Churchill 'hob-nobs' with (Jan 1916), 789; appeals to Lloyd George to give Churchill a place in his government (Dec 1916), 820
- Bailey, Wilfred Russell: and Churchill's first day with the Grenadier Guards (20 Nov 1915), 575–6
- Bailleul (France): German armoured cars reported near (Sept 1914), 68; brewery vats of, used for delousing of Churchill's battalion (Jan 1916), 640; MAPS, 75, 631
- Balaclava (battle of, Oct 1854): Churchill compares losses of, with those of battle of Loos (Sept 1915), 642
- Balcarres, 10th Earl of (David Alexander Edward Lindsay): a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683
- Balfour, Alice Blanche: 72
- Balfour, Arthur James: learns of naval situation from Fisher (July 1914), 16; enthuses to Fisher about Churchill, 17; at Guildhall (Sept 1914), 62, 63; impressed by Churchill's military prediction of 1911, 64; reports on Churchill's military reflections, 72; defends Churchill in House of Commons against charges of responsibility for sinking of *Aboukir*, *Cressy* and *Hogue*, 86; and Churchill's regulations about promotion to Admiral of the Fleet, 87; at War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; questions offensive naval policy in North Sea, 181; asks about Britain's sea defences, 181–2; Fisher writes to, of importance of attack on Turkey (4 Jan 1915), 237; at War Council (7

Balfour, Arthur James—*continued*

Jan 1915), 242; at War Council (13 Jan 1915), 251; outlines benefits to be gained by victory at the Dardanelles, 272; agrees on need for military help to Serbia, 273-4; comments on value of armoured car squadrons, 290n; asks War Council about political effects of occupation of Gallipoli Peninsula, 296; wants as many troops as possible sent to Dardanelles (24 Feb 1915), 305; Churchill urges need for 115,000 troops at Dardanelles on, 306; favours purely naval attack at Dardanelles, in contrast to his opinion two days earlier, (26 Feb 1915), 308, 310; approves giving Russia a privileged position at Dardanelles in any post-war settlement, 321; and the protection of the Europeans in Constantinople, 322; asks about naval advance up Danube, 323-4; favours post-war neutralization of Kiel Canal, 334; argues at War Council (19 March 1915) in favour of partitioning Turkey, 356; Asquith describes as a man with a 'futile feminine brain', 361, and of 'superficial charm', 362; on the problems of a renewed naval attack at the Dardanelles, 370; Margot Asquith warns Lloyd George of the hostility of, 372; critical (8 April 1915) of a military landing on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 389; Churchill's reply to, 390; Fisher protests at Churchill talking to, 426; Sir J. French puts his grievances to (May 1915), 430; tells War Council (14 May 1915) Gallipoli positions should not be evacuated, 432-3; Churchill appeals to, as an intermediary with the Conservatives (17 May 1915), 445, 455; Churchill suggests, as his successor as First Lord, 448; Churchill suggests, as Secretary of State for War, 449, 451; Fisher refuses to serve under, as First Lord, 452, 467; most senior Admiralty officials favour, as First Lord, 457; to become First Lord, 465; Churchill

Balfour, Arthur James—*continued*

relieved to be succeeded by, 468; Churchill sends seven points to, on future of Dardanelles operation (26 May 1915), 470-1; Churchill describes his 'cool quiet courage', 484; Churchill seeks to influence, over supplies for the Dardanelles, 485, 502; Churchill proposes Bulair landing to, 494; explains shortage of troop escort vessels for Dardanelles, 497; appoints Fisher Chairman of the Board of Inventions and Research (4 July 1915), 506-7; approves Churchill's proposed visit to Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 510; Churchill urges need for greater aerial activity at the Dardanelles on (22 July 1915), 514; Churchill worried about lethargy of (3 Aug 1915), 516; Churchill urges renewed naval attack to (21 Aug 1915), 524; opposes renewed naval attack, 525; Churchill angered by (5 Sept 1915), 526; at Calais Conference (July 1915), 526-7; and the origin of the tank, 537; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; and the use of Monitors at the Dardanelles (Sept 1915), 541-2; Churchill proposes renewed naval attack to (Oct 1915), 548; Margot Asquith seeks to alert, against an alleged Lloyd George-Curzon-Churchill plot, 556, 557; believes Kitchener unsuitable to be Secretary of State for War (Oct 1915), 559, 560; and Churchill's defence of his air policy (Oct 1915), 561; and speculation on Churchill's future career (Nov 1915), 563; Lady Randolph Churchill plans to dine with (Nov 1915), 594; and the Gallipoli evacuation (Nov 1915), 601; Lady Randolph Churchill reports 'they say he has gone to sleep' (Dec 1915), 618; and Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty (Jan-March 1916), 702-3; Churchill's criticisms of Admiralty administration of (Feb-March 1916), 707-11, 716-36, 749,

Balfour, Arthur James—*continued*

755; Mrs Churchill describes as 'wan and white, but still purring away' (April 1916), 756; Churchill criticizes air policy of (May 1916), 763-4, 767; his sneers echoed by a lesser man, 774; Churchill describes (31 May 1916) 'cowardice, inertia, futility and insolence' of Admiralty regime under, 776; asks Churchill to draft Jutland communiqué (2 June 1916), 777; Churchill writes that he 'dozes placidly upon the Admiralty throne' (Aug 1916), 798; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 822

Ballin, Albert: Churchill dines with (24 July 1914), 5

Baltic Sea: Churchill wants Japanese help to secure naval command of (29 Aug 1914), 44, 202; Churchill suggests joint Anglo-Russian action in, 52-3; 84; Churchill wants British naval action in (22 Dec 1914), 225-6, 228, 231, 237, 246; Fisher wants British naval plans concentrated on (20 Jan 1915), 259, 265; Churchill describes 'ultimate object' of Navy as access to (28 Jan 1915), 272; Churchill repeats, action in, is Britain's 'proper line of strategy' (3 March 1915), 324; Fisher insists, it is 'the decisive theatre' (16 March 1915), 348; rumours of a planned British naval offensive in, 400; MAPS, 53, 842

Barclay, Sir George: reports fears of a Turkish attack on Russia, 198

Basra (Turkey): British consul at arrested (Oct 1914), 217, 219; occupied by Government of India troops (Nov 1914), 221, 223; Hankey wants troops at withdrawn, and sent to Dardanelles (24 Feb 1916), 301; the India Office declare that it 'must form part of the British Empire' after the war, 355; Hamilton believes Turks unable to recapture because of the military pressure at Gallipoli, 499; proposed extension of British control from

Basra (Turkey)—*continued*

Alexandretta to, 509; British Force advances towards Bagdad from, 590n; MAP, 839

Battenberg, Prince Louis Alexander of: Churchill discusses European crisis with (25 July 1914), 5; and the halting of the dispersal of the Fleet (26 July 1914), 6-7; and decision to send Fleet to North Sea, 8-9; and replacement of Callaghan by Jellicoe, 14, 16; Fisher's opinion of, 17; at Anglo-French naval discussion (30 July 1914), 18-19; and the *Goeben*, 26, 30, 41; and the British Expeditionary Force, 34; Churchill sends strategic thoughts to, 37; Churchill confers with, after fall of Namur, 55; willing to share responsibility for Admiralty prevention of invasion, 58; Churchill expresses danger of aerial attack to, 72; and orders to discontinue Dogger Bank patrol, 85; enthusiastic about air attack on German Zeppelin sheds, 89; and defence of Antwerp, 103, 104; arranges departure of troops for Antwerp, 109, 115, 262; perturbed by Churchill's absence, 111; Asquith not very trustful of, 117; critical of Churchill's Antwerp mission, 119-20; his work supervised by Asquith, 131; Churchill dissatisfied with, 145; his resignation as First Lord (October 1914), 147-53, 157, 721; contrasted with Fisher, 185; discusses possibility of Gallipoli landings (2 Sept 1914), 203; his nephew killed in action, 228; and revived criticism of Churchill's Admiralty administration (Aug 1915), 531; receives an account of Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 708-9

Batum (Russia): Russian army corps at, 316, 322; MAP, 839

Bautzen (Saxony) (battle of, 1813): 171

Bax-Ironside, Sir Henry George Outram: reports (6 Feb 1915) Austrian policy is to crush Serbia, 277-8; reports (6 Feb 1915) Bulgarians

- Bax-Ironside, Sir Henry George Outram—*continued*
 borrowing money from Germany, 280;
 reports (10 March 1915) possibility of
 Bulgarian co-operation with the Allies,
 335
- Bayly, Sir Lewis: Clementine Churchill's
 advice on, 15; studies possible offen-
 sive action against Germany, 19-20;
 angered by Churchill's phrase 'rats in
 a hole', 84; ordered to haul down his
 flag, 185; described as a fool by Fisher,
 268
- Beauchamp, 7th Earl (William
 Lygon Beauchamp): 245; reports
 Liberal Ministers' belief that Churchill
 'primary cause of trouble' in crisis of
 May 1915, 454
- Beatty, Sir David: opposes replacement
 of Callaghan by Jellicoe, 14; Clemen-
 tine Churchill's advice to her husband
 about, 15; critical of Churchill's
 actions at the siege of Antwerp, 134;
 approves Fisher's return to Admiralty,
 154; worried about Churchill and
 Fisher quarrelling, 155, 187
- Beatty, Lady (Ethel Field): 133, 154, 155
- Beaverbrook, 1st Baron, *see both* Aitken,
 Sir William Maxwell *and* *Politicians
 and the War*
- Beckenham, Henry Anstead: Churchill's
 personal shorthand writer, 485
- Beerbohm, Max: on Asquith's premier-
 ship, 699*n*
- Beirut (Turkey): Captain Richmond
 wants British troops landed at, instead
 of at Gallipoli, 389; MAP, 838
- Beith, John Hay (Ian Hay): serves with
 with the Argyll and Sutherland High-
 landers, 630; at Churchill's battalion
 sports day, 641
- Belfort (France): British aviators attack
 Friedrichshafen from (21 Nov 1914),
 172; MAP, 173
- Belgian Congo: Churchill distrustful of
 Belgian policy in, 10
- Belgium: independence of, 1; neutrality
 of, 7, 9-10, 12, 22-4; German inten-
 tion to invade, 26; Cabinet decision
- Belgium—*continued*
 about, 27; German invasion of (3 Aug
 1914), 31, 53-5; and the British desire
 to defend Antwerp (October 1914),
 96-134; Churchill believes has become
 'a mere succession of fortified lines'
 (by Dec 1914), 226; British pilots
 attack Zeppelins which refuel in, 240;
 anxious to use British armoured car
 squadron, 290*n*
- Belgrade (Serbia): Austrians occupy (1
 Dec 1914), but driven out of (14 Dec
 1914), 224; Austrians reoccupy (9
 Oct 1915), 549; MAPS, 545, 842
- Bellairs, Carlyon: opposes Churchill's
 return to political influence (March
 1916), 723, 725
- Benckendorff, Alexander Count de: and
 Russian fears of an Austrian naval
 attack, 193
- Bengal, Bay of: British ships search for
Emden in, 139
- Bentham, John Henry: at Antwerp (Oct
 1914), 119
- Berard, Edouard: Governor of Calais,
 52
- Berehaven (Co. Cork): *Invincible* and
Inflexible ordered to sail to, 192
- Beresford, Lord Charles William de la
 Poer: at Other Club meeting (6 Aug
 1914), 35; Fisher willing to co-
 operate with, 50; and formation of
 Royal Naval Division, 51; rebuked by
 Churchill for calling Prince Louis 'a
 German', 148; asks for details of Royal
 Naval Division activities at Antwerp,
 170; criticizes conduct of the war at
 sea (27 Nov 1914), 177; questions
 Dardanelles operation in House of
 Commons (22 April 1915), 398, and
 again (4 May 1915), 413; believed to
 be about to combine with Churchill
 and Carson (Dec 1915), 590; criticizes
 Churchill's 'wicked statement' (March
 1916), 729; appeals for compulsory
 military service (April 1916), 755
- Berkeley Hotel (London): Lord Esher
 lunches with Mrs Churchill at (Dec
 1915), 608-9

- Berlin: Fisher believes 'spy postman' has sent letter to, 49; Churchill proposes Russian advance on (19 Aug 1914), 52; Sir J. French confident of reaching, if he can be reinforced, 61; consternation reported in, after British air raid on Düsseldorf and Cologne (9 Oct 1914), 123; Royal Naval Division prisoners of war near, 125; secret instructions for Admiral Souchon from, 193; Churchill resurrects (Dec 1914) British naval plan to help Russians advance on, 225-6, 228; Churchill wants Sir J. French to land at Emden and advance on, 244, 245; Churchill revives (25 March 1915) plan for attack on, 373; Fisher asserts Dardanelles troops should have been sent to, 426; MAPS, 53, 842
- Bermuda: troops cross Atlantic from, 37
- Bernau, William Henry: and Churchill's proposed visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 511; and Churchill's proposed visit to the war zone in France (Sept 1915), 530
- Bertie, Sir Francis Leveson: Grey informs, of need for French help at Antwerp, 102; reports Antwerp position not hopeless, 105; Grey informs, of British rôle at Antwerp, 124; Grey informs, of 'promises of 1908' to Russia about the future of Constantinople, 320; sends Grey report of Russian refusal to allow Greeks to join in the attack at the Dardanelles, 328; asks Northcliffe what Lord Esher's status is in France, 589*n*
- Besika Bay (Turkey): British ships at (2 Sept 1914), 205; Fisher wants British military landing at (Jan 1915), 234-5; French Government want military landing at (Aug 1915), 526; MAPS, 235, 840
- Bessarabia (Russia): Kitchener believes Russia should restore to Rumania, 211
- Bethell, Sir Alexander Edward: 85, 374
- Bethlehem (Turkey): Lloyd George does not wish to see, under French control, 343
- Bethune (France): 760; MAP, 75
- Betteshanger (Kent): Naval Brigade leaves for Antwerp from, 112
- Bieberstein, Marschall von: establishes German influence at Alexandretta (before 1914), 234-5
- Bignold, Sir Arthur: mistaken for a German spy, 82; innocent, 83
- Billing, Noel Pemberton: commands air raid on Friedrichshafen (21 Nov 1914), 172; fails to be elected at Mile End by-election (25 Jan 1916), 714*n*; elected at East Hertfordshire by-election (10 March 1916), 733-4, 736; attacks the Government's air policy, 744, 749
- Bingham, Ralph Charles: recalls Churchill's training with the Grenadier Guards (Nov 1915), 577
- Birdwood, Sir William Riddell: acting commander of troops assembling at the Dardanelles, 305, 322; sceptical (6 March 1915) of a naval success at Dardanelles without military support, 331; at conference on board *Queen Elizabeth* (22 March 1915), 363-4; wants to land the Anzac troops between Enos and Gulf of Xeros, avoiding Gallipoli Peninsula, 392; wants to withdraw from Anzac area on first day of Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 407; temporarily replaces Hamilton at the Dardanelles (17-28 Oct 1915), 554; and the evacuation of the Anzac area (Dec 1915), 619; takes Jack Churchill on to his Staff, 636
- Birmingham: Churchill agrees to speak at, but then declines (Sept 1914), 77
- Birrell, Augustine: 583, 689
- Bir Saba (Turkey): Turkish troops retire to, 279
- Black Sea: Russian fears of Austrian Fleet in, 193; British fears that *Goeben* and *Breslau* will sail into, 197; *Goeben* and *Breslau* bombard Russian ports in (29 Oct 1914), 215, 216, 219; need to restore access to, 230, 237; Russia regrets cannot take naval initiative in,

Black Sea—*continued*

266; Fisher insists on military occupation of Dardanelles in order to ensure opening of, 287; Balfour on importance of obtaining wheat from, 308; Allied shipping locked up in, 350; MAPS, 235

Blandford, Marquis of (John Albert Edward William Spencer-Churchill): visits Churchill at Admiralty (Aug 1914), 36

Blandford (Dorset): Royal Naval Division reviewed at, 305-6; Rupert Brooke at, 402

Blenheim, battle of (1704): 'glories of', revived in 1914, 141

Blenheim Palace (Oxfordshire): Churchill refuses to spend Christmas at, 36; Churchill plans to paint at, 759; Northcliffe sends bust of Napoleon to Churchill at, 782; Churchill tries to calm his mind by painting at, 787

Blenheim (British depot ship): Fisher wants in home waters, not at Dardanelles, 260

Bléquin (France): 572; MAP, 575

Blondel, Jean Camille: 198

Blücher (German battle cruiser): sunk in Dogger Bank action (24 Jan 1915), 261; 625

Boer War (1899-1902): Liberal criticisms during, 79

Bombay (British India): troops transported to France from (Aug 1914), 37; Churchill's shoulder dislocated at (1896), 635*n*

Bône (Algeria): bombarded by *Breslau*, 29; MAP, 29

Bonham Carter, Maurice: 87, 426, 438, 445, 456, 737; marries Violet Asquith (30 Nov 1915), 594

Bonham Carter, Violet (*for earlier references, see Asquith, Violet*): at the opening of Clementine Churchill's Ponders End canteen (3 Feb 1916), 698-9; and Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 709, 713, 718, 721,

Bonham Carter, Violet—*continued*

722, 723, 731-2, 733; recalls Churchill's thoughts about the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 798

Booth, Frederick Handel: asks in Parliament if naval aviators have violated Swiss neutrality (Nov 1914), 173-4; votes against the Government in the Nigeria debate (Nov 1916), 815*n*

Boothby, Evelyn Leonard Beridge: Turks do not allow to return to his ship (11 Aug 1914), 193

Bordeaux (France): French Government moves from Paris to, 105, 106

Borkum (German island): possible British base, 19, 21; *Königin Luise* sails from, 38; Churchill resurrects plan for seizure of (Dec 1914), 225, 228, 236, 237, 241-2, 245, 246-7, 265; Richmond determined to undermine Churchill's plan for an attack on, 258; Fisher wants naval action at, 346, 348; Churchill drafts (24 March 1915) lengthy scheme for the capture of, 373; Fisher asserts Dardanelles troops should have been landed at, 426; Churchill recalls (Dec 1915) plans for landing at, 600; MAPS, 19, 842

Born Deep (Holland): possible British base, 21

Bosnia (and Herzegovina): 230; MAP, 842

Bosphorus (Turkey): German merchant ships being armed in (27 Aug 1914), 199; forts manned by German officers, 206; Hankey sees no insuperable obstacle in capture of (Dec 1914), 230; Russia cannot hope to destroy guns at entrance to, 266; Russians believe substantial number of troops needed to capture, 292; Balfour believes naval operations alone sufficient to open (26 Feb 1915), 308; Churchill wishes Admiral Carden to attack, following his entry into the Sea of Marmara, 315, 323, 326-7; Russian plan to attack forts at the mouth of, 344; Russians bombard forts at mouth

- Bosphorus (Turkey)—*continued*
 of (3 May 1915), 417; Churchill's brother-in-law believes, can still be forced (Sept 1915), 548; MAPS, 838, 841
- Botha, Louis: 490
- Boulogne (France): 572, 625; MAPS, 575, 649
- Bout Deville (France): Churchill in reserve billets at, 580
- Bouvet* (French battleship): sunk at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 351, 354, 397*n*; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Bowles, Thomas Gibson: accuses Churchill of responsibility for sinking of *Aboukir*, *Cressy* and *Hogue*, 86
- Brabazon, Sir John Palmer: on Churchill's dismissal from the Admiralty, 482-3
- Brade, Sir Reginald Herbert: and conscription (Aug 1915), 528; Bonar Law wants Asquith to consult, about sending Churchill to command in East Africa (Nov 1915), 565; at the War Office, 616
- Braithwaite, Walter Pipon: asks Kit-chener for a good air service at the Dardanelles, 339
- Breslau* (German light cruiser): British ships keep watch on (2 Aug 1914), 28; bombards Bône (4 Aug 1914), 29; escapes British search, 40-2; escape of, a cause of criticism of Churchill, 143, 170; reaches Constantinople (10 Aug 1914), 193; sold to Turks, 194-5; renamed *Midilli*, 194*n*; Britain insists on German crew leaving, 196; action against Russia feared (26 Aug 1914), 198; Troubridge instructed (8 Sept 1914) to sink, 206; Carden instructed (21 Sept 1914) to sink, 209; Turkish Government warned about (28 Oct 1914), 214; bombards Russian Black Sea ports (29 Oct 1914), 215; defeat of envisaged, 249; Fisher willing to offer one million pounds for (March 1915), 359; known to be out of action (Aug 1915), 525
- Brett, Maurice Vyner Baliol: critical of Churchill's visit to France (6-10 May 1915), 425
- Bridgeman, Sir Charles Francis: succeeded by Prince Louis as First Sea Lord (1912), 15*n*; warns Haig against Churchill (1916), 650*n*
- Bridgeman, Lady: her 'power to do mischief', 15
- Bridges, George Tom Molesworth: liaison officer with Belgian army, 136; Clementine Churchill talks about her husband's military future to (Dec 1915), 595; shows Churchill coastal trenches (Dec 1915), 600; Churchill expects to serve under, 606; Churchill lunches with, 624
- Briggs, Edward Featherstone: in air raid on Friedrichshafen (Nov 1914), 172
- Brindisi (Italy): *Goeben* refused coal at, 26; MAP, 29
- British Campaign in France and Flanders*, *The* (A. Conan Doyle): 810*n*
- British East Africa: Churchill's possible military command in (Nov 1915) 563, 565-6, 598; Churchill wants greater use of native troops from 'for war or for labour' (July 1916), 794
- British Expeditionary Force: and the Admiralty, 11; Cabinet refuses to send to France (1 Aug 1914), 24; Navy ready to send to France, 34; crosses to France, 37, 39, 40; reaches Amiens, 47; at Mons, 53; retreats from Mons, 54; Churchill sees need for continual reinforcement of, 56-57; in retreat for thirteen days, 62, 69-70; advances across Marne, 71-2; Kit-chener fears its position endangered (Oct 1914), 103; Churchill wants advance of, along Belgian coast (Jan 1915), 241; Sir J. French unwilling to send troops to south-east Europe from, 277
- Brooke, Rupert: at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 116, 130; departs for Dardanelles, 305; quite certain he will be killed (25 Feb 1915), 306; dies (24

Brooke, Rupert—*continued*

April 1915), 401; Churchill's obituary of (26 April 1915), 401-2

Brookes, Warwick: defeats Pemberton Billing at Mile End by-election (25 Jan 1916), 714ⁿ

Browne, William Denis: at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 130

Brownlow, D'Arcy Charles: appointed Military Governor of Basra (Nov 1914), 221

Bruges (Belgium): Marine reconnaissance to, 56; problem of refugees from, 97-8; Churchill expected at (3 Oct 1914), 106; General Rawlinson reaches (6 Oct 1914), 115; British forces to be reorganized at, 118; Rawlinson establishes HQ at, 120; MAP, 99

Brusilov, Alexei Alexeievich: his successful Russian offensive (June-Aug 1916), 793, 799

Brussels (Belgium): German troops reach, 75, 101; MAPS, 54, 99

Buchan, Alastair Ebenezer: wounded (Feb 1916), 677

Buchanan, Sir George William: at Petrograd, 217, 232, 280, 320, 328, 400

Bucharest (Rumania): 213; MAPS, 545, 842

Buckle, Archie Stewart: shows Churchill British trenches at Neuve Chapelle (Dec 1915), 624

Buckmaster, Sir Stanley Owen: unwilling to suppress press criticism of Churchill's actions at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 129; becomes Lord Chancellor (May 1915), 470

Bulair (Turkey): Churchill wants sufficient troops to hold the lines of (20 Feb 1915), 300, 307, 308; Hankey on possible need for troops at, 309; proposed cutting of Turkish communications at, 323; Churchill names 18 March 1915 as possible day for landing troops at, 324; Churchill says 20,000 troops ready to land at, by 20 March 1915, 326; Admiral

Bulair (Turkey)—*continued*

Carden instructed (5 March 1915) to prevent movement of Turkish troops across, 327; Fisher worried by Churchill's obsession with, 348; the probable effect of British ships either side of, 368; the French to attack with aircraft, 369; de Robeck does not believe that a landing at would cause Turks to abandon Gallipoli Peninsula, 377; Turkish troop movements at, visible from the air, 397; Churchill proposes (11 June 1915) landing at, 494; Sir Ian Hamilton opposed to landing at, 495; Churchill continues to be attracted by idea of landing at (19 June 1915), 500; Churchill's plan to cut Turks off from (Oct 1915), 544; MAPS, 545, 840

Bulgaria: possibility of action against Austria by (Aug-Sept 1914), 200-2; promises Greece to remain neutral in event of Graeco-Turkish war, 206; Greeks want simultaneous attack on Turkey by, 209; Churchill wants an ally (Sept 1914), 210, 211; hostile to Greece, 221; Asquith reports Churchill's mind 'set on' (5 Dec 1914), 223; not disposed to join Allies (Dec 1914), 224; importance of in British plans to defeat Turkey, 230, 235, 244, 249, 273-5, 323; Austrian aim to attract, 277, 279-80; Churchill asserts possibility of joint action with, 302, 307, 308; Churchill intends British troops will capture Adrianople for, 315; has no reason to join Allies before some sign of their success, 317; Churchill stresses need for alliance with, 329; German submarines said to be on their way to Turkey via, 338; possibility reported of an attack on Turkey by (March 1915), 348, 349; German ammunition reported in transit for Turkey through, 372; Hankey recalls (Aug 1916) effect of naval attack at Dardanelles on, 380; Fisher wants as an ally in attack on Turkey, and also

Bulgaria—*continued*

on Greece, 382; Balfour wants an 'arrangement' with, 389; reported Turkish fears of attack from, 396; Churchill on importance of alliance with (30 April 1915), 412; Asquith recalls (March 1917) beneficial effect of Dardanelles operation on, 480; Cabinet divided over policy towards (June 1915), 505-6; Churchill fears German armies will seduce (Aug 1915), 524; Churchill's plan for military action against (Oct 1915), 544-5; mobilizes against Serbia (Oct 1915), 549; Grey proposes hostilities against (Oct 1915), 553; Churchill against wasting men in fighting Bulgaria (Dec 1915), 597, and (May 1916), 772; attacks Rumania (1 Sept 1916), 797; MAPS, 235, 545, 838, 840, 842

Bulgarian Horrors and the Question of the East, The (W. E. Gladstone): quoted, 188*n*

Buller, Sir Redvers Henry: Fisher describes as 'seized with mental paralysis', 268

Burgas (Bulgaria): MAP, 842

Burn, Henry Pelham: Churchill dines with (Jan 1916), 643-4; Churchill sends to see Lloyd George (June 1916), 782-3

Burns, John Elliot: on Churchill's character (May 1915), 477-8

Bush, Eric: serving at sea on fifteenth birthday, 170*n*

Buxton, Charles Roden: departs on mission for the Balkans (Aug 1914), 201; sees Asquith on return from mission (Jan 1915), 255

Buxton, Edward Noel: departs on mission to the Balkans, 201-2; reports on his mission, 213-14; sees Asquith on return from mission, 255

Buxton, 1st Viscount (Sydney Charles Buxton): 454, 477

Cabinet, the British: meeting (24 July 1914), 3-4; records of, 3*n*; meeting

Cabinet, the British—*continued*

(27 July 1914), 7-8; Churchill fears to consult, 9; meeting (29 July 1914), 10, 12; Churchill reads F. E. Smith's letter to, 22; rejects full naval mobilization (1 Aug 1914), 23, 462; opposes sending Expeditionary Force to France, 24; ratifies full naval mobilization (2 Aug 1914), 25; and German ultimatum to Belgium, 27; not consulted about Anglo-French naval co-operation, 27-8; refuses Churchill's request to fight *Goeben* before outbreak of war, 30; report of discussion on Japan in, 43; rumour of opposition to formation of Royal Naval Division, 51; approves Churchill's Marine expedition to Ostend, 56; rejects Churchill's arguments for compulsory service (26 Aug 1914), 57; alarmed by Sir John French's decision to fall back behind Paris (31 Aug 1914), 59-60; not informed of Churchill's visit to France (10 Sept 1914), 72; learns of naval problem during one of Churchill's visits to France (22 Sept 1914), 89-90; discusses defence of Antwerp (30 Sept 1914), 101-2; approves sending Naval Brigades to Antwerp, 109; Churchill offers to resign from (5 Oct 1914), 111-12; meeting at which Antwerp discussed (5 Oct 1914), 113; Churchill reports on Antwerp to (7 Oct 1914), 120; Kitchener warns of possibility of invasion (mid-Oct 1914), 138; Asquith reports Grey and Haldane 'fussy & jumpy' (23 Oct 1914), 139; discusses need to keep *Audacious* sinking secret (28 Oct 1914), 142; bewildered by British naval defeat off Coronel, 158; regards Coronel defeat as, in Asquith's words, 'not creditable to the officers of the Navy', 159; sanctions joint military and naval attack along Belgian Coast towards Ostend (end Nov 1914), 163; seizure of Turkish battleships approved at (31 July 1914), 192; discusses sale of *Goeben* and *Breslau* to Turkey (12

Cabinet, the British—*continued*

- Aug 1914), 194; Asquith describes Churchill as 'violently anti-Turk' at (21 Aug 1914), 196; agrees to financial aid for Rumania and Serbia (2 Sept 1914), 204; attempts to avert a Turkish attack by holding Indian troops in Egypt (3 Sept 1914), 205; discusses Turkish policy (23 Sept 1914), 210-11; imminent Turkish invasion discussed at (23 Oct 1914), 214; Grey uncompromising towards Turkey at (28 Oct 1914), 214; decides not to take warlike acts against Turkey (30 Oct 1914), 215; insists on need for formal declaration of war against Turkey (4 Nov 1914), 219; reported by Montagu to be entirely loyal to Asquith (March 1915), 362; discusses (23 March 1915) the possibility of a renewed naval attack at the Dardanelles, 366; Churchill and Kitchener in dispute at (7 April 1915), 387; Churchill defends his policy for dealing with mines at the Dardanelles in a memorandum for (24 April 1915), 399; Churchill circulates defence of his policy as First Lord to (30 May 1915), 486; Asquith informs (7 June 1915), of decision to reinforce Dardanelles army, 494; discusses possibility of alliance with Bulgaria (30 June 1915), 506; meets (19 July 1915), 513; War Policy Committee of (Aug-Sept 1915), 527-9; Carson angered by 'waste of time' at (Sept 1915), 529-30, 532-3; meets (6 Oct 1915), 548; meets (12 Oct 1915), 558-9; Churchill speaks of resignation in (Nov 1915), 560; unanimous that Kitchener should leave War Office (1 Nov 1915), 562; decides to evacuate Gallipoli Peninsula (23 Nov 1915), 581; discussion about Gallipoli evacuation in, 601-2, 617; F. E. Smith enters (3 Nov 1915), 615*n*; Churchill describes as 'weak and foolish', 624; F. E. Smith sends Churchill news of discussions in (Jan 1916), 688
- Cabinet Ministers, conclaves of: on 1 Aug 1914, 25; on 2 Aug 1914, 26; on 3 Aug 1914, 27-8; on 31 Aug 1914, 60; on 5 Nov 1914, 176*n*; *see subsequently index entries for War Council and Dardanelles Committee*
- Cabinet War Committee, the: successor to the Dardanelles Committee, 563; Churchill excluded from, 563-4; Fisher attends, 730-1
- Cadiz (Spain): Napoleon sends Ville-neuve to sea from (1805), 145
- Caillard, Sir Vincent Henry Penalver: sent to Constantinople (1913), 190
- Cairo (Egypt): MAP, 838
- Calais (France): Churchill declines to send Royal Naval Division to, 52, 108; German threat to (Sept 1914), 72; Churchill crosses to (16 Sept 1914), 80; fear of German advance to (Oct 1914), 103, 135, 136; Anglo-French conference at (July 1915), 506, 526-7, 546; MAP, 575, 649
- Callaghan, Sir George Astley: given order not to disperse Fleet, 6; given order to send Fleet to North Sea, 9; replaced by Jellicoe (4 Aug 1914), 14-16
- Callaghan, Lady: her 'power to do mischief', 15
- Callwell, Charles Edward: reports (3 Sept 1914) on possibility of seizure of Gallipoli Peninsula, 203; critical of Kitchener's indecision, 257; attends War Council Sub-Committee (28 Jan 1915), 273; registers Jack Churchill's name for service at Gallipoli, 340; serves on Committee to examine British territorial needs in Turkey, 391; informs H. A. Gwynne of the May crisis (22 May 1915), 458-9; and Dardanelles ammunition supplies, 516; and conscription (July-Aug 1915), 527-8; and Guy Dawnay's visit to London (Sept 1915), 540; examines merits of western and Gallipoli fronts, 548*n*; Bonar Law wants Asquith to consult about appointment of Churchill to East African military command

- Callwell, Charles Edward—*continued*
 (Nov 1915), 565; explains the reason for Asquith deciding not to publish the Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 785; his post-war criticisms of politicians controlling war strategy, 787ⁿ
- Calshot (Kent): anti-aircraft flights based on, 66
- Calza Bedolo, Gino: at Antwerp, 115; Churchill's interview with, on the minorities question, 202
- Cambrai (France): Royal Naval Air Service reconnaissance over, 65; MAP, 75
- Cambon, Paul: 24, 261, 278; his scathing remark about Italy reported, 426ⁿ
- Cameron, John Ewen: takes Sir Ian Hamilton to the Dardanelles, 342; at the Dardanelles, 352
- Cameron of Lochiel, Donald Walter: his bravery at the battle of Loos, 642
- Campbell, Henry Hervey: placed on half pay, 86
- Campbell, William Pitcairn: offers Churchill command of a battalion (12 June 1915), 495
- Canada: army volunteers from transported across Atlantic, 37; troops from, in the first trench 'raids', 636-7; ratio of troops to inhabitants, 794ⁿ
- Canadian Cavalry Division: J. E. B. Seely in command of, 83
- Canopus* (British battleship): off South America, 156-60, 182; to go to Dardanelles, 249ⁿ, 265; at Dardanelles, 331
- Cape Helles (Turkey): Allied ships assemble off (Feb 1915), 282; Fisher urges need for a military base at (20 March 1915), 360; Hamilton decides on military landing at, 393; military landings at (25 April 1915), 402-10; further offensive at (6-9 May 1915), 414-16; MAPS, 403, 519
- Cape St Vincent (Portugal): 265
- Carden, Sackville Hamilton: appointed to command at Dardanelles (21 Sept 1914), 209; prevents Turkish torpedo boat leaving Dardanelles (27 Sept 1914), 212; instructed to 'commence hostilities at once against Turkey' (31 Oct 1914), 216; bombards outer forts of Dardanelles (3 Nov 1914), 218, 219; asked about possibility of forcing Dardanelles (3 Jan 1915), 233-4; his reply reaches Admiralty (5 Jan 1915), 237-8; his detailed proposals awaited, 242; his detailed proposals discussed in London (12 Jan 1915), 248-52; his plan authorized (14 Jan 1915), 254; and preparations for naval action, 255-7, 259-60, 266, 272, 276-7, 279, 286-7; bombards outer forts (19 Feb 1915), 300-1; instructions to (24 Feb 1915), 304-5; resumes bombardment (25 Feb 1915), 305; destroys outer forts (25-6 Feb 1915), 314; destroys further forts, 321; believes he can enter Sea of Marmara after fourteen more days' bombardment (4 March 1915), 324; reports on landing of sailors to demolish forts (4 March 1915), 326; receives instructions (5 March 1915) on what to do once his ships reach Sea of Marmara, 326-7; reports on slow progress of bombardment at the Dardanelles, 331, 332; asks for more destroyers, 336; Fisher offers (11 March 1915) to replace him as commander-in-chief, 337; new instructions to (11 March 1915) urging him to 'press the attack vigorously', 337; Fisher wants him 'to press on!', 338; reports minesweeping difficulties (13 March 1915), 342; Churchill urges him to take greater risks, 343; instructed (15 March 1915) to concert with Sir Ian Hamilton 'in any military operations which you consider necessary', 347; forced by illness to give up his command (16 March 1915), 348; Fisher believes de Robeck better than, 354; Churchill's orders to (5 Feb 1915) about mines, 399
- Cardiff (Glamorgan): Asquith visits (2 Oct 1914), 102; Asquith unable to return in time from, 103

Caribbean Sea: *Karlsruhe* sinks British merchant ships in, 264*n*

Carnarvon (British cruiser): and preparations for battle of Falkland Islands, 182

Carrying On (Ian Hay): 630*n*

Carson, Sir Edward Henry: and possible Coalition on eve of war, 13; writes encouragingly to Churchill (5 Aug 1914), 32-3; Churchill sends defence of his naval policy to, 159; becomes Attorney-General (May 1915), 470; and Churchill's Irish policies, 476; warns Churchill not to miscalculate difficulties at the Dardanelles (21 June 1915), 504-5; opposes further Gallipoli offensive (19 Aug 1915), 523; angered by Cabinet procedure (Sept 1915), 529-30, 532-3; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; discusses Gallipoli with Guy Dawnay (Sept 1915), 540; against remaining at Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 549; and Gallipoli reinforcements, 551; his resignation from the Cabinet (12 Oct 1915), 558, 559; believed to be about to combine with Churchill and Beresford (Dec 1915), 590; Milner wants Churchill to join (Dec 1915), 591; succeeded as Attorney-General by F. E. Smith, 615*n*; rejects compromise over conscription, 618; Garvin sees as a 'fighting-quartette' with Lloyd George, Fisher and Churchill (Dec 1915), 621-2; and the Marconi affair (1912), 623*n*; and the final withdrawal from Gallipoli (Jan 1916), 685; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 688; Churchill sees as a future Cabinet colleague, 697; Fisher compares Churchill's 'courage' with, 701; his opposition to Asquith (1916), 704, 711, 713; and Churchill's opposition to Asquith, 736, 738-9, 741, 743, 745-6, 747, 750, 751-2, 753; seeks to mediate between Churchill and Milner (April 1916), 756; seen as a leader with Lloyd George of an opposition to Asquith

Carson, Sir Edward Henry—*continued*

(April 1916), 756-7; and the introduction of the Military Service Bill (April 1916), 758; Churchill's political hopes centre on, 759; protests against exclusion of Irish soldiers from the Military Service Bill (May 1916), 761-2; Churchill seeks to stimulate to further criticism of the War Office, 775; presses Asquith to publish Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 783, 785; organizes the first serious parliamentary challenge to Asquith (8 Nov 1916), 815-16; and the fall of Asquith (Nov-Dec 1916), 816-17, 820; becomes First Lord of the Admiralty (Dec 1916), 823

Cassel, Sir Ernest Joseph: Churchill dines with (24 July 1914), 5; holds \$20,000 of American stocks for Churchill, 511; Lady Randolph Churchill dines with (2 Feb 1916), 668; Mrs Churchill to dine with (Jan 1916), 689; Mrs Churchill reports on 'red-hot patriotism' of, 693; at a bridge evening with Asquith, 708

Cassel (France): armoured car skirmish near, 68; armoured cars in region of, 93, 135; Royal Marines and armoured cars forced to return to Dunkirk from, 103, 105; MAP, 75

Cattaro (Austria-Hungary): Grey wants British attack on, 252-3; German submarine known to have reached, on way to Dardanelles (21 May 1915), 463; MAP, 842

Caucasus (Russia): possibility of Turkish action against Russia in, 200; Lloyd George wants to attack Turkey in order to relieve pressure on Russia in, 229; Russians appeal for help to reduce Turkish pressure on, 231, 232; Turks routed in, 396

Cavan, 10th Earl of (Frederick Rudolph Lambart): agrees that Churchill can train with the Grenadier Guards (Nov 1915), 573-4; suggests Churchill leaves the trenches until appointed to command a Brigade, 588; Churchill

- Cavan, 10th Earl of—*continued*
 hopes to serve under, 606-7; tells Haig of Churchill's 'excellent work' in the trenches, 615
- Cawley, Sir Frederick: Churchill sets out his criticism of Balfour's naval administration in letter to (11 March 1916), 735; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with, 739; Churchill asks C. P. Scott to keep in touch with, 753
- Cawley, Harold Thomas: killed in action at Gallipoli (Sept 1915), 735ⁿ
- Cawley, John Stephen: killed in action during the retreat from Mons (Aug 1914), 735ⁿ
- Cawley, Oswald: killed in action in France (Aug 1918), 735ⁿ
- Cecil, Lord Edgar Algernon Robert: on Conservative support for Liberal policy, 22-3; Churchill informs about war crisis, 24, 25; Churchill explains need for Home Rule proposals to (8 Sept 1914), 77; criticizes Churchill's ninth wartime visit to France in House of Commons (12 May 1915), 424; becomes Under-Secretary to Grey at the Foreign Office, 470; wants to persevere with Gallipoli attack (June-July 1915), 504; Churchill advises (26 June 1915), not to threaten Bulgaria, 506; suggested as deputy to Asquith at War Office (Nov 1915), 560; Mrs Churchill describes, as 'enamoured of the Government' (Jan 1916), 693; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 820; becomes Minister of Blockade (Dec 1916), 822; vetoes Churchill's inclusion in Lloyd George's Cabinet (7 Dec 1916), 823
- Cecil, Evelyn: says Churchill's command of a battalion would be 'a grave scandal' (16 Dec 1915), 614
- Cecil, Lord Hugh Richard Heathcote Gascoyne: advocates neutral policy for Britain, 22; accuses Churchill of responsibility for war, 27; threatens strong Conservative opposition over Irish Home Rule (11 Sept 1914), 77
- Chamberlain, Joseph Austen: in dispute with Churchill over Irish Home Rule (Sept 1914), 77-80; Bonar Law shows Churchill's appeal to (May 1915), 464; becomes Secretary of State for India (May 1915), 470; and Churchill's Irish policies, 476; and the War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (Aug 1915), 527, 529; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 820; vetoes Churchill's inclusion in Lloyd George's Cabinet (7 Dec 1916), 823
- Champagne (France): French military offensive in, 540, 774
- Chanak (Turkey): Turkish defences at, 218; Carden's plan to advance ships to (12 Jan 1915), 248, 276; Churchill stresses to Carden importance of 'turning of the corner' at (11 March 1915), 337; British ships ready to attempt the advance to (18 March 1915), 351, 352; Churchill wants 15-inch howitzer to bombard from the Kilid Bahr plateau, 391; Birdwood suggests overland attack across plain of Troy on (April 1915), 392; combined naval and military plan to drive the Turks from, 393; fires started in by naval bombardment, 412; Churchill wants 'a dash on' (Sept 1915), 540; Churchill proposes as military objective (Oct 1915), 544; MAPS, 29, 353, 403, 519, 545, 838, 840, 842
- Channing of Wellingborough, Baron (Francis Alston Channing): praises Churchill's Dundee speech (5 June 1915), 491
- Charlemagne (French battleship): at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), MAP, 353
- Charleroi (Belgium): French troops south of, 53; MAP, 54
- Chatalja Lines (Turkey): 249, 308, 317; MAP, 841
- Chatham (British cruiser): Churchill willing to recall from Dardanelles (14 May 1915), 435

- Chatham (Kent): Churchill goes with Heligoland Bight victors to, 59
- Cheetham, Milne: learns Britain does not mean to issue immediate declaration of war on Turkey (4 Nov 1914), 218
- Chelmsford, 3rd Baron (Frederick John Napier Thesiger): to be Viceroy of India (1916), 683
- Cherbourg (France): British Admirals urge defence of, 55; MAP, 54
- Chicago Tribune*: 638n
- Chile: von Spee's squadron makes for coast of (Oct 1914), 156
- China: Churchill said to have offered, to Japan (Aug 1914), 43
- Christian, Arthur Henry: placed on half pay, 86
- Chocolate Hill (Gallipoli Peninsula): 521; MAP, 519
- Chunuk Bair (Gallipoli Peninsula): Allied troops fail to reach summit of (6-10 Aug 1915), 520; Churchill willing to allow Hamilton to make further attack on, 523; MAPS, 403, 519
- Churchill, Clementine: Churchill's letters to (1914-15), 4-5, 10-11, 21, 25, 31, 39, 161, 228; at Cromer (July 1914), 407; Churchill sends impressions of European crisis to, 10-11; her advice about the replacement of Callaghan by Jellicoe, 15-16; on Churchill's mood (August 1914), 18; believes it would be 'a wicked war', 25; on Conservative approval of her husband (Aug 1914), 33; uses Blenheim Palace notepaper to write to Lloyd George, 36; asks about Expeditionary Force, 39; worried about Churchill's tiredness, 39-40; returns ring to wealthy shipowner, 40; reports news of German spies, 44-5; returns to London, 58; welcomes Commodore Keyes after Heligoland Bight action, 59; warns Churchill of danger of his repeated visits to France, 92; Grey praises Churchill to, 121; apprehensive of Fisher's influence over her husband, 187; at Walmer Castle, 245;
- Churchill, Clementine—*continued*
 intervenes to provide Royal Naval Division with adequate medical facilities, 306; at Admiralty when news of possible Greek military help at Dardanelles arrives, 315-16; recalls her distrust of Sir Ian Hamilton's staying power, 325; recalls the strain on Fisher during Churchill's absence in France (6-10 May 1915), 419; appeals to Asquith to allow Churchill to remain at Admiralty (20 May 1915), 459; Edwin Montagu visits (26 May 1915), 472; recalls effect of Dardanelles on her husband, 473; blames Lloyd George's 'Welsh trickiness' for her husband's demotion in May 1915, 476; her one remaining ambition in May 1915, to dance on Asquith's grave, 479; refuses to be dependent on Asquith's charity, 493; moves with her family into 41 Cromwell Road, 493; Churchill's letter to (17 July 1915), to be opened in the event of his death, 511-12; helps to organize canteens for munitions workers, 533-4; and Churchill's departure for France (Nov 1915), 571; Sir John French writes to, 574; writes to Churchill while he is on the western front (Nov 1915-May 1916), 583, 593, 594, 599, 605, 606, 620, 622, 623, 626, 644, 647, 654, 660, 663, 666, 669, 676, 681, 682, 683, 684, 687, 689, 690, 691, 693, 698, 703, 707, 741, 742, 743, 744, 748, 749, 753, 756, 758, 759; writes encouraging letter to Curzon (Dec 1915), 604; telephoned by her husband from St Omer, 605; lunches with Lord Esher, 608-9; lunches with Lloyd George, 622-3; takes one of her husband's young officers to the Music Hall, 669; dines with F. E. Smith (27 Jan 1916), 693; critical of Reginald McKenna (28 Jan 1916), 693; critical of Lloyd George (2 Feb 1916), 698; and the opening of her canteen at Ponders End (3 Feb 1916), 698-9; opposes reunion of Churchill and

Churchill, Clementine—*continued*

Fisher (Feb–March 1916), 701, 709, 711–12; entertains Asquith to a bridge evening (Feb 1916), 707–8; Asquith tells C. P. Scott of hostility of, 730–1; urges her husband to suspend his criticisms of Asquith, 736–7; visits Carson (13 March 1916), 738; opposes her husband's precipitant return to London, 741–2, 743, 749, 753; urges her husband not to send letter to Northcliffe, 748; dines at 10 Downing Street (April 1916), 756; encourages her husband to return from the trenches to Parliament (April 1916), 758–9; not afraid of telling her husband of his faults, 824–5

Churchill, Diana: at Cromer (July 1914), 4–6; returns to London, 58; 581; to carry train at Nellie Hozier's wedding (Dec 1915), 595; 647

Churchill, Lady Gwendeline: at Cromer, 40, 44; 'vy good and brave', 161; at Blandford review of Royal Naval Division (25 Feb 1915), 306; Churchill family join forces with, 493; rouses Churchill's interest in painting (June 1915), 502; Churchill expresses desire to fight Turks to, 505; and Churchill's departure for the trenches (Nov 1915), 571; Churchill paints, 582; and Sir John French's dismissal, 616; her concern for Churchill's safety and future, 644–5; dines with one of Churchill's battalion officers, 669; Mrs Churchill's safety valve, 684; at a bridge evening with Asquith (Feb 1916), 708; Churchill asks her to look after Sir Archibald Sinclair, 740

Churchill, Henry Winston Spencer (Peregrine): at Hoe Farm (June 1915), 501

Churchill, Lord Ivor Spencer: visits Churchill at Admiralty (Aug 1914), 36

Churchill, John, 1st Duke of Marlborough: 136, 573, 578, 589, 727

Churchill, John-George Spencer: at Cromer (Aug 1914), 18, 416; at Hoe Farm (June 1915), 501; to carry

Churchill, John-George Spencer—*continued*
train at Nellie Hozier's wedding (Dec 1915), 595

Churchill, John Strange Spencer (Jack): at Cromer (Aug 1914), 18; dines at Admiralty House, 30; Churchill informs, of retreat from Mons, 55; about to leave for France with Oxfordshire Hussars, 58, 74; reaches Dunkirk, 135; under fire near Ypres, 160–1; Churchill expresses his frustrations about the Dardanelles to, 310–11; to join Sir Ian Hamilton's staff at Dardanelles, 339, 340, 341; reports (25 March 1915) on difficulties facing any renewed naval attack at Dardanelles, 371; reports (11 April 1915) on naval preparations at the Dardanelles, 393; Churchill impresses need to persevere on, 396; sends Churchill an account of the Gallipoli landings, 405–6, 407–8; Churchill informs (26 April 1915) of 20,000 extra men in Egypt available for Gallipoli landings if Sir Ian Hamilton asks for them, 410; worried about the prospects of the Army on the Gallipoli Peninsula (5 May 1915), 414; describes renewed Helles offensive (6–9 May 1915), 415–16; Hamilton describes (15 May 1915), as 'invaluable asset', 437; Churchill telegraphs news of his leaving the Admiralty to (18 May 1915), 451; Churchill telegraphs to (23 May 1915), 'the policy goes on', 468; Churchill telegraphs to, that Kitchener 'vy friendly to the Dardanelles' (26 May 1915), 471; Churchill decides to move into house of, 493; Churchill writes to (12 June 1915), 496, and (19 June 1915), 500–1; sends Churchill an account of the continued fighting on the Helles front (26 June 1915), 504; does not approve Churchill's desire to join Hamilton's army, 505; Churchill writes to (3 Aug 1915), 516; sends Churchill an account of the renewed

- Churchill, John Strange Spencer (Jack)—*continued*
 attack at Gallipoli (6–11 Aug 1915), 518, 520–1; Churchill sends complaint about Sir Ian Hamilton to (Sept 1914), 542; believed to be at Salonika (Nov 1915), 582; reports on evacuation of Anzac area (Dec 1915), 619; Churchill writes to from France, while in reserve, 636; on the 'jealous fools' who keep his brother in the trenches (April 1916), 758; Churchill writes to (21 June 1916), 783; Churchill writes to 'I am learning to hate' (15 July 1916), 787–8, 790; Churchill asks Seely to 'look after', 791
- Churchill, Randolph Frederick Edward Spencer: at Cromer (July 1914), 4–6, 18; returns to London, 58; 'will carry on the lamp' should Churchill die, 511; wants to buy a spade to help Churchill protect himself in the trenches, 583; and his father's achievements, 587; a page at Violet Asquith's wedding (30 Nov 1915), 594; to carry train at Nellie Hozier's wedding (4 Dec 1915), 595; Churchill sends his first letter to (Jan 1916), 647
- Churchill, Lady Randolph: dines at Admiralty House (4 Aug 1914), 30; Fisher unable to dine with (Dec 1914), 186; and Churchill's departure for the front (Nov 1915), 571; Churchill writes to, from the front, 581, 595, 682, 694, 750; writes to Churchill while he is at the front, 582, 594, 617–18, 647, 668, 681; arranges dinner for C. P. Scott, Garvin, F. E. Smith, Hopwood and others on Churchill's return from the trenches (3 March 1916), 708–9; Violet Bonham Carter meets Churchill at house of (8 March 1916), 731; Jack Churchill writes to, 758
- Churchill, Lord Randolph Henry Spencer: Churchill urged not to repeat resignation mistake of, 560; Churchill said to have forgotten political legacy of, 589; Churchill wonders 'what he
- Churchill, Lord Randolph Henry Spencer—*continued*
 wd think of it all' (Jan 1916), 647; Asquith begs Churchill not to repeat the 'one impulsive action' of, 733; he and his son believed by Lord Derby to be 'absolutely untrustworthy', 801
- Churchill, Sarah Millicent Hermione: 120, 228, 594, 647; 'that golden Sarah', 581
- Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer
 ATTITUDES TO THE WAR:
 'I am interested, geared up & happy' (28 July 1914), 31; 'the terrible march of events' (13 Aug 1914), 46; 'We have not entered this business without resolve to see it through' (24 Aug 1914), 55; 'The war will be long and sombre' (11 Sept 1914), 76; 'We sit still in the steady cold blooded game & can I think keep it up indefinitely' (20 Sept 1914), 83; has 'tasted blood' and is 'beginning like a tiger to raven for more' (reported by Asquith, 7 Oct 1914), 122; 'this war . . . will devour us all' (16 Oct 1914), 135; 'This is no ordinary war . . . it raises passions between races of the most terrible kind' (29 Oct 1914), 152; on the battle of Coronel 'a most painful disaster, relieved only by its daring and gallantry' (Sept 1915), 160; 'I expect I shd be vy frightened but I wd dissemble' (9 Nov 1914), 161; 'our situation is . . . of waiting to be kicked, & wondering when & where' (21 Dec 1914), 181; 'you know what military necessity compels in war' (19 Aug 1914), 196; 'Sooner or later, Germany will be starved and beaten' (31 Aug 1914), 201; 'Are there not other alternatives than sending our armies to chew barbed wire in Flanders?' (29 Dec 1914), 226; 'Germany is the foe, & it is bad war to seek cheaper victories & easier antagonists' (4 Jan 1914), 235; 'long vistas of pain & struggle lie ahead' (26 Feb 1915), 310; 'Half-hearted

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

ATTITUDES TO THE WAR—*continued*

measures will ruin all—& a million men will die through the prolongation of the war' (6 March 1915), 328; 'This is a vry hard war to win' (20 March 1915), 361; 'There is no need for action now—only the most minute preparations' (26 March 1915), 374; 'Don't run short of stuffing behind your attack—even if you never need it' (26 April 1915), 410; 'every minute of this is history: and every attack requires backing' (26 April 1915), 410; 'Whether it is my fault for trying or my misfortune for not having the power to carry through is immaterial. We are now committed . . .' (11 May 1915), 421; 'he objected strongly to despondency' (War Council notes, 14 May 1915), 432; '*someone* has to take the responsibility' (14 May 1915), 434; 'I am the one who gets the blame for anything that goes wrong' (15 May 1915), 440; 'one difficulty after another has been surmounted' (16 May 1915), 442; 'I will not *take* any office except a military department' (17 May 1915), 448; 'the naval situation is in every respect assured' (18 May 1915), 451; 'The rule to follow is what is best calculated to beat the enemy, and not what is most likely to please the newspapers' (20 May 1915), 460; 'by waging successful war we shall dominate public opinion' (20 May 1915), 460; 'Let me stand or fall by the Dardanelles, but do not take it from my hands' (21 May 1915), 464; 'Punishment must be doggedly borne' (26 May 1915), 471; 'the last thing he would pray for is Peace' (reported by Asquith, 14 Sept 1914), 480; 'We should be ill-advised to squander our new armies in frantic and sterile efforts to pierce the German lines' (1 June 1915), 486; 'No where has there been design or decision' (2 June 1915), 488; 'You have taken the

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

ATTITUDES TO THE WAR—*continued*

measure of your foe, you have only to go forward with confidence' (5 June 1915), 489; 'Trust the people. They have never failed you yet' (5 June 1915), 490; 'The times are harsh, the need is dire, the agony of Europe is infinite, but the might of Britain hurled into the conflict will be irresistible' (5 June 1915), 491; 'our whole nation must be organised, must be socialised . . .' (5 June 1915), 492; 'The war is terrible. . . The youth of Europe—almost a whole generation—will be shorn away' (19 June 1915), 501; 'honour for all who have never flinched and never wavered' (7 July 1915), 509; 'Death is only an incident, & not the most important wh happens to us in this state of being' (17 July 1915), 511; 'The tendency to the negative is vry pronounced' (3 Aug 1915), 516; 'the profitless slaughter pit of Ypres' (3 Aug 1915), 516; 'slaughter is commonplace' (2 Aug 1915), 517; 'may be very unpopular' (24 Aug 1915), 528; 'this period of darkness and peril' (18 Sept 1915), 534; 'what a weary toil for the millions' (14 Jan 1916), 636; on the battle of Loos 'hopeless failure . . . sublime heroism utterly wasted' (17 Jan 1916), 641; 'a game that is played with a smile . . . If you can't smile grin' (26 Jan 1916), 651; 'one long holiday for me' (6 Feb 1916), 661; 'It will all come right in the end, though not by the shortest or least costly method' (6 Jan 1916), 680; 'we have only to persevere to conquer' (29 Jan 1916), 694; 'War is action, energy & hazard. These sheep only want to browse among the daisies' (22 Feb 1916), 707; 'To lose momentum is not merely to stop, but to fall' (7 March 1916), 718; 'At a hideous cost in life and treasure we have regained control' (7 March 1916),

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

ATTITUDES TO THE WAR—*continued*

718; 'One wondered whether the nations were getting their money's worth out of the brooding armies' (17 March 1916), 740; 'Do not my darling one underrate the contribution I have made to the public cause' (22 March 1916), 742; 'I greatly fear the general result' (14 April 1916), 755; 'All the more condemnation to you . . . for losing so much valuable time' (17 May 1916), 767; 'Nothing stands in the way of our obtaining aerial supremacy . . . but yourselves' (17 May 1916), 769; 'bundles of bloody rags' (23 May 1916), 773; 'Nothing counts but winning the war' (31 May 1916), 776; 'But for the war, I wd not dream of acting with these people' (21 June 1916), 783; 'excitement is bankrupt, death is familiar, and sorrow numb' (July 1916), 791; 'the accumulation of extortionate profits in the hands of private individuals' (22 Aug 1916), 801; of the tank 'In that idea resided one real victory' (16 Sept 1916), 810

OPINIONS:

'Balkan quarrels are no vital concern of ours' (31 July 1914), 21; 'the world is gone mad—and we must look to ourselves—and our friends' (2 Aug 1914), 26; 'We have not entered this business without resolve to see it through' (23 Aug 1914), 54; 'You have only to endure to conquer' (4 Sept 1914), 63; 'The war will be long and sombre. It will have many reverses of fortune . . .' (11 Sept 1914), 76; 'Victory is a better boon than life and without it life will be unendurable' (23 Oct 1914), 141; 'the ignoble position of one who merely cheers from the bank the gallant efforts of the rowers' (9 Nov 1914), 161; 'it is no time for hedging neutrals to give themselves airs' (27 Nov 1914), 174; 'to terrorize

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

OPINIONS—*continued*

Admirals for losing ships is to make sure of losing wars' (11 Jan 1915), 185; 'Nothing appeals to the Turkish Govt but force' (11 Sept 1914), 208; 'Kitchener does not work far afield or far ahead' (31 Dec 1914), 231; 'It is not until all the Northern possibilities are exhausted that I wd look to the S of Europe for the profitable employment of our expanding milty forces' (11 Jan 1915), 247; 'Unless we are prepared to run a risk & play a stake the Balkan situation is finished fatally for us' (7 Feb 1916), 278; of Lloyd George, 'LG has more true insight & courage than anyone else' (26 Feb 1915), 311; 'the settlement of all territorial questions should be left until the end of the war' (3 March 1915), 321; 'Half-hearted measures will ruin all' (6 March 1915), 328; 'excuse frankness—but friends have this right, and to colleagues it is a duty' (11 April 1915), 395; 'every minute of this is history' (26 April 1915), 410; 'the imperious need to go forward to victory' (29 May 1915), 484; 'without decision & design a very terrible catastrophe may ensue' (2 June 1915), 488; 'The soldiers who are ordered to their deaths have a right to a plan, as well as a cause' (15 Oct 1915), 554; 'Time will vindicate my administration of the Admiralty' (11 Nov 1915), 564; 'Without winning any sensational victories, we may win this war' (15 Nov 1915), 567; 'It is all chance and our wayward footsteps are best planted without too much calculation' (27 Nov 1915), 585; 'If my destiny has not already been accomplished I shall be guarded surely' (27 Nov 1915), 587; 'energy & efficiency in *execution* are as important as good decisions in principle' (8 Dec 1915), 602; 'The Balkans must be left to stew in their own bitter juice', (8

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

OPINIONS—*continued*

Dec 1915), 605; 'That odious Asquith & his pack of incompetents & intriguers ruin everything' (12 Dec 1915), 607; 'My conviction that the greatest of my work is still to be done is strong within me' (15 Dec 1915), 611; 'Asquith will throw anyone to the wolves to keep himself in office' (19 Dec 1915), 617; 'It is not hard for me to give orders, as you know' (7 Jan 1916), 632; 'I wd much rather go back to the trenches tonight, than go home in any position of mediocre authority' (28 Jan 1916), 656; 'By God I wd make them skip if I had the power—even for a month' (9 Feb 1916), 662; 'God for a month of power & a good shorthand writer' (3 Jan 1916), 680; 'I shd have made nothing if I had not made mistakes' (7 Jan 1916), 681; 'It is better to be gagged than give unheeded counsel' (19 Jan 1916), 688; 'the power which I cd use better than any other living Englishman to determine the war policy of Britain' (28 Jan 1916), 693, 823; 'Are they not fools not to use my mind—or knaves to wait for its destruction by some flying splinter' (16 Feb 1916), 705; 'if my life cd materially aid our fortunes I would not grudge it' (17 March 1916), 740; 'Nothing cd I think deprive me of my hold on the public attention' (28 March 1916), 745; sees his death as 'an impoverishment of the war-making power of Britain wh no one wd ever know or measure or mourn' (26 March 1916), 745-6; 'The numbing hand of Asquith is over everything, and all initiative & energy seem paralysed' (10 April 1916), 753; 'the un wisdom with wh our affairs are conducted makes me almost despair at times of a victorious issue' (14 April 1916), 755; 'Whatever is done must be done in the cold light of science' (23 May 1916), 774; on

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

OPINIONS—*continued*

the Dardanelles, 'only the facts can tell the tale: and the public ought now to have them' (8 June 1916), 782; 'the Nation & the Dominions whose blood has been poured out vainly have a right to know the truth' (7 July 1916), 787; 'Asquith reigns supine, sodden and supreme' (15 July 1916), 787; 'Asquith in particular seems to be on the road to pay his debts' (31 July 1916), 791; 'stagnation, apathy & playing for safety are the orders of the day' (30 Aug 1916), 806; 'there are plenty of good ideas if only they can be backed with power and brought into reality' (1 Oct 1916), 810

CHARACTERISTICS OF, AS SEEN BY HIS CONTEMPORARIES:

'tingling with life to the tips of your fingers' (Clementine Churchill, 1 Aug 1914), 18; 'very bellicose and demanding immediate mobilization' (Asquith, 1 Aug 1914), 23; 'longing for a sea fight in the early hours of the morning' (Asquith, 4 Aug 1914), 30; his 'grasp of the situation . . . above all praise' (*The Times*, 4 Aug 1914), 31; 'a really happy man' (Lloyd George, recalling 4 Aug 1914), 31; 'a statesman who well understands the nature of war' (*Observer*, 9 Aug 1914), 39; 'Public Enemy No 1' (John Cordingley, recalling Aug 1914), 50; 'not sane' (Captain Richmond, 20 Aug 1914), 51; 'stupid and boring' (Lord Emmott, 26 Aug 1914), 57; 'hardly one war was enough for him' (Lord Birkenhead, recalling 1914), 58; 'the equivalent of a large force in the field' (Asquith, reported by Haldane 3 Sept 1914), 64; his boasting and bombast (Sir Lewis Bayly, 2 Oct 1914), 84; his frankness and calm (*Manchester Guardian*, 2 Oct 1914), 84-5; no longer believed to be 'a gentleman' (George V, June 1915), 87; 'the only young

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

CHARACTERISTICS OF, AS SEEN BY HIS
CONTEMPORARIES—*continued*

vital person in the Cabinet' (Clementine Churchill, 26 Sept 1914), 92; 'intrepid' (Asquith, 3 Oct 1914), 106; 'energetic and imperative' (Henry Stevens, recalling Oct 1914), 109; his 'lunatic hands' (Captain Richmond, 4 Oct 1914), 110; 'tranquilly smoking a large cigar . . . under a rain of shrapnel' (Calza Bedolo, Oct 1914), 115; 'quite off his head' (Lord Stamfordham, 5 Oct 1914), 120; 'genius for war' (Sir Edward Grey, 7 Oct 1914), 121; his 'incompetence' as First Lord (H. A. Gwynne, 16 Oct 1914), 127; 'initiative, energy, enterprise' (*Observer*, 18 Oct 1914), 128; 'not . . . a Napoleon' (*Morning Post*, 19 Oct 1914), 129; 'an utterly unbalanced mind' (Bonar Law, 14 Oct 1914), 132; 'unconsciously playing a part—an heroic part' (A. G. Gardiner, 1913), 132; 'unique and invaluable . . . full of courage and resource' (Haldane, 19 Oct 1914), 133; 'must be mad' (Sir David Beatty, 18 Oct 1914), 134; 'autocratic' (Lord Fisher, mid-Oct 1914), 137; 'cannot be expected to have any grasp of the principles and practice of naval warfare' (*Morning Post*, 21 Oct 1914), 144; 'busy trying to get a flashy success' (Frances Stevenson, 5 Nov 1914), 159; his judgement 'highly erratic' (Sir John French, 20 Dec 1914), 167; 'intrepid, valorous . . . dreaming of war . . . a born soldier . . . quite unsensitive' (Margot Asquith, 30 Nov 1914), 179–80; 'monopolized all initiative in the Admiralty' (Lord Fisher, 20 Dec 1914), 186; 'young, self-assertive, with a great self-satisfaction, but unstable' (Beatty, 4 Dec 1914), 187; his 'volatile mind' (Asquith, 5 Dec 1914), 223; 'a good deal of rugged fluency' (Asquith, 13 Jan 1915), 253; 'a dialectician'

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

CHARACTERISTICS OF, AS SEEN BY HIS
CONTEMPORARIES—*continued*

(recalled by Violet Bonham Carter, 1965), 263; 'intolerable . . . devoured by vanity' (Asquith, reported by Margot Asquith, 17 Feb 1915), 289; 'far the most disliked man in my Cabinet' (Asquith, reported by Margot Asquith, 7 March 1915), 329; 'longwinded . . . full of perorations' (*ibid*), 330; 'a Tory . . . knows *nothing* of the British workman' (Margot Asquith, 7 March 1915), 330; 'does not inspire trust' (Asquith, 24 March 1915), 362; 'really loyal' (Asquith, 30 March 1915), 363; turns conversation into 'a monologue' (Lloyd George, 5 April 1915), 385; 'ignorance of strategic and tactical principles' (H. A. Gwynne, 22 April 1915), 398; 'perseverance and energy' (*ibid*), 399; 'ignorant' (Captain Richmond, 22 April 1915), 399; 'a determined mad Gambler' (Lord Fisher, 14 May 1915), 429; saw in the war 'the chance of glory for himself' (Lloyd George reported by Frances Stevenson, 15 May 1915), 440; '*The joy of his life is to be 50 yards from a German trench*' (Lord Fisher, 16 May 1915), 442; 'overriding his expert advisers' (*The Times*, 18 May 1915), 450; 'his folly' (General Callwell, 22 May 1915), 458; 'the power, the imagination, the deadliness to fight Germany' (Clementine Churchill, 20 May 1915), 459; neither 'the temperament or the manners' to be Colonial Secretary (Lord Emmott, 20 May 1915), 460; 'He is young. He has lion-hearted courage. No number of enemies can fight down his ability and force' (*Observer*, 23 May 1915), 469; 'far too great to be more than pulled up for a period' (Edwin Montagu, 26 May 1915), 472; his conversation apt 'to degenerate into a monologue' (Asquith, 4 Feb 1915), 476; 'borne along

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

CHARACTERISTICS OF, AS SEEN BY HIS
CONTEMPORARIES—*continued*

on the flood of his all too copious tongue' (Asquith, 16 April 1915), 476; 'dictatorial' (John Burns, 24 May 1915), 478; 'so anxious not to give any offence' (17 June 1915), 498; 'I remain under the shadow of utterly false aspersions' (15 Sept 1915), 532; Carson reported 'so impressed by his ability' (12 Nov 1915), 565; 'England trusts and needs you' (Violet Asquith, 13 Nov 1915), 566; 'a wise counsellor, a brilliant colleague and a faithful friend' (Asquith, 15 Nov 1915), 568; 'one of the foremost men in our country' (Bonar Law, 15 Nov 1915), 569; 'great cheerfulness . . . strictly amenable to discipline' (Edward Grigg, 2 Dec 1915), 589; 'his brilliant conversational powers' (Lord Esher, 1 Dec 1915), 589; 'selfish' (Captain Spiers, 15 Dec 1915), 610; 'an inquiring mind of rare quality' (recalled by Spears, 1970), 625; 'he overlooked nothing' (recalled by McDavied, 1967), 635; 'you are unique in your generation' (Lady Gwendeline Churchill, 21 Jan 1916), 644; 'I must wait in silence the sombre movement of events' (19 Jan 1916), 688; his 'courage' (Lord Fisher, 14 Feb 1916), 701; 'quite spiteful sometimes' (16 Feb 1916), 706; 'stronger and saner' (C. P. Scott, 6 March 1916), 712; 'deranged' (recalled by Violet Bonham Carter, 1965), 721; 'a hound of the lowest sense of political honour, a fool of the lowest judgement & contemptible' (Margot Asquith, 8 March 1916), 729; 'I am not going to give in or tire at all' (26 March 1916), 745; 'The man who makes no mistakes never makes anything' (Sir Arthur Markham, 1 April 1916), 750; his lack of modesty (Bonar Law, 16 Aug 1916), 800; 'will never allow that he is down' (Lord Derby, 19 Aug 1916),

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

CHARACTERISTICS OF, AS SEEN BY HIS
CONTEMPORARIES—*continued*

800; 'absolutely untrustworthy' (ibid), 801; '*Celerity, Courage, Audacity, Imagination*' (Lord Fisher, 15 Aug 1916), 803; 'a megalomaniac . . . sacrificed thousands of lives to no purpose' (*Daily Mail*, 13 Oct 1916), 811; 'anathema in the Army' (David Davies, 22 Nov 1916), 817; 'full of ideas, & good ones too' (Sir Abe Bailey, 2 Dec 1916), 820; 'I would rather have him against us every time' (Bonar Law, Dec 1916), 822

HIS EVIDENCE TO THE DARDANELLES
COMMISSION:

on the idea of an attack at Gallipoli, 200; on the possibility of forcing the Dardanelles, 220; on Turkish military capabilities, 222; on Admiral Carden's suggestions for reaching the Sea of Marmara, 248; on Fisher's decision to send the *Queen Elizabeth* to the Dardanelles, 250; justifies the taking of risks in war, 262; and Fisher's support for the Dardanelles operation, 273; and the argument against a military landing at Gallipoli, 274, 332; on the relation between the Serbian danger and the Dardanelles, 280; on Kitchener's authority at the War Council, 312-13; and the decision to take greater risks at the Dardanelles (11 March 1915), 337; on the naval losses of 18 March 1915, 354; on Fisher's decision to oppose a renewed naval attack (23 March 1915), 364; and the Turkish shortage of ammunition at the Dardanelles, 365; on the need for 'an absolute decision one way or the other', 377

INTRIGUES ALLEGED AGAINST:

to replace Grey by Balfour at the Foreign Office (March 1915), 361-2; to replace Asquith by Lloyd George (March 1915), 362-3; to remove

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

INTRIGUES ALLEGED AGAINST—*continued*
 Kitchener (May 1915), 454; to remove Kitchener and Grey (May 1915), 454, 477; to disclose the details of the shell shortage (May 1915), 460; 'to try & wreck the Gov' (Oct 1915), 556–7, 560; to provide an alternate Government (Dec 1915), 590; to remove Haig from Command of the British forces in France (Oct 1916), 811

MEMORANDA AND MINUTES BY
 (in chronological order):

On forcing the Dardanelles (15 March 1911), 220; on the nature of a German attack on France (13 Aug 1911), 63; on blockade of Germany and Austria (16 Aug 1914), 46; on the establishment of the Royal Naval Division (17 Aug 1914), 50; on Turkish intentions (26 Aug 1914), 197; on the escape of the *Goeben* and *Breslau* (27 Aug 1914), 41; on aerial strategy (5 Sept 1914), 66; on need to repress 'all tendencies to panic' (23 Sept 1914), 139; on the need for a trench-spanning vehicle (23 Sept 1914), 534; on the surrender of German troopships (22 Oct 1914), 93–4; on ordering flying boats from the United States (31 Oct 1914), 66; on the advantages of an invasion of the German island of Sylt (2 Dec 1914), 181; 'any white flag hoisted by a German ship is to be fired on as a matter of principle' (23 Dec 1914), 94; on the use of British naval power (26 Jan 1915), 264–5; urges tank development forward 'with all despatch' (24 Feb 1915), 536; on need for a substantial number of troops at the Dardanelles (25 Feb 1915), 306–7; on inadequacy of existing troops allocated to Gallipoli (27 Feb 1915), 311; advocates 50% tax on all war profits (5 March 1915), 285; on the effect of the North Sea blockade (5 March 1915), 46; on

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

MEMORANDA AND MINUTES BY—*continued*
 need to 'press on' with development of the tank (8 March 1915), 537; on urgency of tank construction (20 March 1915), 537; on importance of capturing the German island of Borkum (24 March 1915), 373; on the possible German invasion of Holland (27 March 1915), 378; on the mine danger at the Dardanelles (24 April 1915), 399; on increase of British naval strength since outbreak of war (30 May 1915), 485–6; on the futility of renewed offensives on the western front (1 June 1915), 486–7; advises military landing on the Bulair Isthmus, Turkey (11 June 1915), 494; on the need to concentrate British military effort against Constantinople (18 June 1915), 498–9; on the need to set up an Air Department and create a powerful 'British Air Service' (during June 1915), 501; on the need for conscription (7 Sept 1915), 530; on the need for Bulgarian support against Turkey and Austria (6 Oct 1915), 544–6; on the prospects at Gallipoli (6 Oct 1915), 546, 547; on the need for a decision on the evacuation of Gallipoli (15 Oct 1915), 554–5; advocates use of gas against the Turks at Gallipoli (20 Oct 1915), 555–6; on the danger of failure at the Dardanelles (25 Oct 1915), 561; on his air policy while First Lord (end October 1915), 560; urges a renewed Franco-Russo-British attack on Turkey (27 Oct 1915), 560; on the need for mechanical devices to break the trench stalemate on the western front (3 Dec 1915), 591–3, 615; on the danger of a new offensive on the western front (1 Aug 1916), 790–1

MILITARY AMBITIONS OF:

writes to his brother 'I shall try to come out too, if there is any use for me' (Aug 1914), 58; telegraphs to Asquith

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

MILITARY AMBITIONS OF—*continued*

from Antwerp 'I am willing to . . . undertake command' (Oct 1914), 110; asks Asquith for 'some kind of military command' (Oct 1914), 121; 'I am willing when the time comes to pay the price' (Oct 1914), 135; tells George V he wants to be a soldier (Oct 1914), 150; writes to Asquith about 'employment in the field' (May 1915), 449; wishes he were at Gallipoli (June 1915), 496; wants 'an escape' from the Government (Sept 1915), 530; seeks command of British forces in East Africa (Nov 1915), 566-7; writes to Seely: 'it is painful being here idle, but I must just wait' (13 Aug 1916), 799

MILITARY SERVICE OF:

with the Grenadier Guards (Nov-Dec 1915), chapter 18, 572-94, 605-8; in command of the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers, in reserve (Jan 1916), chapter 20, 628-47; in the front line (Jan-May 1916), chapter 21, 648-78, 694-8, 737, 744-5, 758-60

MILITARY EXPERIENCES DRAWN ON BY:

to devise new methods of mechanical warfare (Dec 1915), 590-3; to assert importance of extending conscription to Ireland (9 May 1916), 762; to stress need for British air supremacy (17 May 1916), 763, 769; to advocate proper use of conscripts (23 May 1916), 770-1; to compare the trench population with the non-trench population (23 May 1916), 771; to allege 'gross and grave misuse' of military manpower (23 May 1916), 772-3; to oppose the Somme offensive, 773-4, 791-2, 793-4; to criticize the Government's military policy (24 July 1916), 794-6; to advise against premature use of the tank (Sept 1916), 810

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

VISITS ABROAD OF:

his first wartime visit to France (10 Sept 1914), 72-3; his second (16 Sept 1914), 80; his third (22 Sept 1914), 88, 89; his fourth (26 Sept 1914), 92; his fifth (6 Dec 1914), 163; his sixth (29 Jan 1915), 277; his seventh (16 March 1915), 348; his eighth (5-10 May 1915), 414, 416-17, 418, 424, 425; at the siege of Antwerp, (4-6 Oct 1914), 106-19

HOPED-FOR MISSIONS ABROAD OF:

to the Calais Conference (July 1915), 506; to the Dardanelles (July 1915), 510-14; to the Balkan capitals (July 1915), 512; to Russia (Oct 1915), 561, 611*n*; to East Africa (Nov 1915), 563, 565-6, 568

MOODS OF:

'geared up & happy' (20 July 1914), 31; seeks reassurance from Lloyd George (23 Aug 1914), 55; 'Unless we win, I do not want to live any more. But win we will' (24 Aug 1914), 55; 'gloomy & dissatisfied' (Clementine Churchill, 26 Sept 1914), 92; 'very depressed' (Asquith, 8 Oct 1914), 122; cast down by criticisms of his action at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 130-3; 'It is vain to look backwards', 133; 'I have not seen him so despondent before' (Captain Richmond, 24 Oct 1914), 140; 'a rather sombre mood' (Asquith, 27 Oct 1914), 141; 'vexed by trifles' (28 Dec 1914), 168; disappointed by lack of public enthusiasm for the Friedrichshafen air raid (Nov 1914), 174-5; elated by Falkland Islands victory (Dec 1914), 184; 'his most bellicose' (Asquith, 17 Aug 1914), 195; 'violently anti-Turk' (Asquith, 21 Aug 1914), 196; 'I would not be out of this glorious delicious war for anything' (reported by Margot Asquith, 10 Jan 1915), 246; disappointed by limited results

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

MOODS OF—*continued*

of Dogger Bank action (24 Jan 1915), 260-1; impatient with Asquith, Grey and Kitchener (7 Feb 1915), 278; 'the stresses and strains' of the war (15 Feb 1915), 285; 'I wish you had heard what I had to say before assuming that I was in the wrong' (17 Feb 1915), 290; disappointed at failure to obtain troops for the Dardanelles (24 Feb 1915), 304; 'immense and unconcealed dudgeon' (Asquith, 26 Feb 1915), 310; 'breast high about the Dardanelles' (Asquith, 1 March 1915), 316; determined to renew the naval attack at the Dardanelles after the setback of 18 March 1915, 354; frustrated not to be at the centre of planning (March-April 1915), 381; 'It was I who was churlish & difficult' (5 April 1915), 384; 'eaten up with the Dardanelles' (Lord Fisher, 5 April 1915), 385-6; 'a vy anxious time' (7 April 1915), 387; 'his stout attitude' (recorded by Hankey, 1961), 432; glad that Fisher 'lived to endure his pangs' (1928), 452*n*; 'in the highest good humour' (*Advertiser*, 18 May 1915), 454; 'worn out and harassed' (Riddell, 20 May 1915), 457; 'I did not believe it was possible to endure such anxiety' (21 May 1915), 463; 'I thought he would die of grief' (Clementine Churchill, 1969), 472; 'master of myself & at peace' (7 June 1915), 490; 'I find it vy painful to be deprived of direct means of action' (19 June 1915), 501; finds a distraction and sedative in painting (June 1915), 502; 'anxious about the D'lles' (2 Aug 1915), 517; 'the truth must be published' (15 Sept 1915), 532; finds it 'odious . . . watching sloth & folly' (20 Sept 1915), 538; finds it 'damnable' without political influence (2 Oct 1915), 542; wants to resign from the Cabinet (22 Oct 1915), 558; resigns from the Cabinet (30 Oct 1915),

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

MOODS OF—*continued*

560-1 and (11 Nov 1915), 563-4; 'I have made up my mind not to return to any Govt during the war except with plenary & effective executive power' (19 Nov 1915), 573; 'I have lost all interest in the outer world' (22 Nov 1915), 580; 'I am quite young again' (24 Nov 1915), 581; 'how vain it is to worry about things' (27 Nov 1915), 585; 'distressed and unsettled' (3 Dec 1915), 593; 'I am thank God only a spectator now' (1 Dec 1915), 595; 'distressing thoughts' (7 Dec 1915), 602; 'worries great & small recede to remote & shadowy distances' (8 Dec 1915), 603; 'quite cut off from information and . . . content to be' (12 Dec 1915), 607; 'I feel a gt assurance of my power: & now—naked—nothing can assail me' (15 Dec 1915), 611; 'I was depressed' (16 Dec 1915), 612; 'my own energies & capacities . . . wasted' (20 Dec 1915), 621; 'I do not think my pulse quickened' (10 Feb 1916), 664; 'the complete absence of worry or strain' (17 Feb 1916), 670; 'disturbing combinations for my mind' (7 Jan 1916), 681; 'try not to brood too much' (Clementine Churchill, 12 Jan 1916), 684; 'I am impotent to give what there is to be given—of truth & value & urgency' (19 Jan 1916), 688; 'I sorrow only for real things' (28 Jan 1916), 693; 'it riles me to see how ungrateful they are' (14 Feb 1916), 705; 'hesitations & perplexity' (13 March 1916), 738; 'my disturbing moods' (19 March 1916), 740-1; 'the longing for rest & peace' (26 March 1916), 744; 'I am powerless even to utter my warnings' (14 April 1916), 755; 'chewing black charcoal' (15 April 1915), 756; 'Not a day passes without my being the object of unjust reproach' (8 June 1916), 782; 'I am learning to

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

MOODS OF—*continued*

hate' (15 July 1916), 788; 'It is vvy painful to me to be impotent & inactive' (31 July 1916), 791; 'They only want to keep me out' (Aug 1916, recalled by Violet Bonham Carter), 798; 'It is painful being here idle' (13 Aug 1916), 799; 'suffering acutely from his enforced inactivity' (C. P. Scott, 20 Nov 1916), 816; 'almost wistfully eager for news' (Dec 1916, recalled by Lord Beaverbrook), 819; 'righteous anger' (5 Dec 1916, recalled by Lord Beaverbrook), 822

SPEECHES BY:

At the Guildhall, London (4 Sept 1914), 62-3; at the Opera House, London (11 Sept 1914), 75-7; at Liverpool (21 Sept 1914), 84-5; in the House of Commons (27 Nov 1914), 177-8; in the House of Commons (15 Feb 1915), 283-6; at Dundee (5 June 1915), 488-91, 492; at Enfield (18 Sept 1915), 534; in the House of Commons (15 Nov 1915), 566-8; in the House of Commons (7 March 1916), 716-22; in the House of Commons (8 March 1916), 728; in the House of Commons (9 May 1916), 761-2; in the House of Commons (17 May 1916), 763-9; in the House of Commons (23 May 1916), 770-4; in the House of Commons (31 May 1916), 775; in the House of Commons (24 July 1916), 793-7; in the House of Commons (16 Aug 1916), 799-800; in the House of Commons (22 Aug 1916), 801-2

UNPUBLISHED NOTES OF:

on the effect on the Kaiser of not dispersing the Fleet, 7; the Cabinet 'absolutely against war' (27 July 1914), 8; on Belgian policy before 1914 and Belgian heroism in 1914, 10; on Kitchener's forebodings about German high-explosive shells, 11; on his fear of a surprise German sub-

Churchill, Winston Leonard Spencer

UNPUBLISHED NOTES OF—*continued*

marine attack, 13; on the intolerable suspense (1 Aug 1914), 24; on the need to make Kitchener Secretary of State for War, 28; on Kitchener's precipitant cancellation of day-time troop crossings of the Channel, 34-5; on his anxiety about troop movements at sea, 37; critical of Milne's respect for Italian neutrality, 42; on the role of Lord Fisher before 1914, 145; on his relationship with Fisher (Oct 1914-May 1915), 156; on Fisher's opposition to renewing the naval attack at the Dardanelles (11 May 1915), 418-19

Churchill, Winston Spencer (1940-): 791ⁿ

Churchill his paintings (compiled by David Coombs): 503ⁿ, 659ⁿ

'Churchill's Innocent Victims': a nickname for the Royal Naval Division, 48

'Churchill's Pets': a nickname for the Royal Naval Division, 48

Clark, Ian Hew Waldegrave Dalrymple: drops bomb on Germans near Cambrai (3 Sept 1914), 65; reconnaissance flight beyond Bailleul, 68

Clauson, John Eugene: 299

Clyde, James Avon: a member of Dardanelles Commission, 789

Coalition: discussed on eve of war, 12, 22; Churchill fails to advance the cause of, although suggesting presence of Bonar Law and Lansdowne at War Council (10 March 1915), 335ⁿ; Bonar Law presses for and Asquith accepts (17 May 1915), 446; Churchill's Constituency Chairman critical of (20 May 1915), 461; Margot Asquith on Churchill and (24 May 1915), 466; completed (25 May 1915), 469-70; Churchill's potential strength in, 479; Churchill believes it was 'forced on' by Lloyd George in May 1915, 541; many Generals disillusioned by (April 1916), 756

Coke, Sir Charles: 569

- Colenso, battle of (15 Dec 1899): 268
- Collet, Charles Herbert: bombs German Zeppelin shed at Düsseldorf (22 Sept 1914), 89
- Cologne (Germany): British air raid on Zeppelin sheds at (22 Sept 1914), 89; second air raid on (9 Oct 1914), 122-3, 136; Churchill refers to air raids on, 721, 764; MAP, 88
- Colombo (Ceylon): 265
- Colonial Office: Grey protests to about Churchill's actions, 298-9; Lloyd George suggests sending Churchill to (May 1915), 448; Churchill willing to go to, 450; Cabinet Ministers reported reluctant that Churchill should go to, 454; Asquith implored not to send Churchill to, 460
- Colville, John Rupert: records a conversation with Churchill about 'a very unhappy time of my life', 793
- Committee of Imperial Defence: Kitchener a member of, 9n; its plans for national emergency, 11; General Wilson's demonstration to (1911), 28; discusses Dutch neutrality, 96; Churchill a member of, 114; recommends military landing at Haifa (1909), 220; examination of possible joint military and naval attack on Dardanelles (1906), 294; Fisher insists on Sir Arthur Wilson being dismissed from, 452; Churchill wants special sub-committee of, to report on future of Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 547
- Compulsion, *see* Conscription
- Conan Doyle, Arthur: Churchill writes to about the 'tank' (Sept 1916), 810
- Concerning Winston Spencer Churchill* (Sir George Arthur): 817n
- Congleton, 5th Baron (Henry Bligh Fortescue Parnell): killed in action at Ypres (18 Nov 1914), 607n
- Conqueror* (British battleship): collision with *Monarch* (27 Dec 1914) impairs naval margin, 268
- Conscription: pre-1914 campaign for, 47; Churchill argues in favour of, at Cabinet (26 Aug 1914), 57; the Conscription—*continued*
- growing pressure for (June 1915), 492; Kitchener attacked for his opposition to (Oct 1915), 556-60; Curzon appeals to Churchill for support over (Nov 1915), 602; its advocates gain in strength (Dec 1915), 618-19; the growing crisis over (Jan 1916), 679-82; the renewed crisis over (April 1916), 750-2, 755-8; Churchill on the need to make proper use of, 770-2
- Conservative Party: and the coming of war, 22-3; attitude to Churchill, 32-3; and Home Rule, 77-80; critical of Churchill's visits to France, 90, 424-5; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 132; Churchill describes certain members of as 'swine', 164; believes Asquith did not reconvene Parliament (Oct 1914) in order to avoid questions on Antwerp, 169; critical of Churchill's policy on the collier question, 284; finds it difficult to attack War Office while Kitchener is Secretary of State, 312; and criticism of Gallipoli landings, 413; denied equal part in prosecution of the war, 469-70; and Churchill's hopes of support from during the political crisis of May 1915, 476-7; the growing call for conscription, 492; Churchill believes its 'dream and intention' a Conservative Government, 692; Asquith waiting for a change in the hostile attitude to Churchill of (March 1916), 733; said by Churchill to 'despise' Asquith (Aug 1916), 798; hostility towards Churchill unabated (Aug 1916), 800; Derby believes, 'will not work' with Churchill, 801
- Constance, Lake of: 172, 173; MAP, 173
- Constantine, King of Greece: refuses to support Britain against Turkey, 221; refuses to allow British troops to land at Salonika, 287; said to favour helping Britain against Turkey, 316; rejects pro-Allied policy of his Prime

- Constantine, King of Greece—*continued*
Minister, 329; talks of benevolent neutrality for Greece, 336; his influence weakened by prospect of a British victory at Gallipoli, 412
- Constantinople (Turkey): *Goeben* and *Breslau* anchor off (10 Aug 1914), 40; Admiral Limpus at, 188; Churchill visits (1910), 189; dockyard inadequacies of, 190; dockyard construction in to be under British control, 191; reaction in to the seizure of Turkish ships, 192–3; Churchill believes vulnerable to attack from the sea, 201; Russia anxious to extend control at, 211; Asquith believes Russian rule of 'its proper destiny', 215; Grey supports Russian claims for, 217; Churchill sees possibility of Britain dictating peace terms at, 220; Russia wants reports spread of threat to, 233; Fisher believes possession of imperative (4 Jan 1915), 237; F. E. Smith wants Indian troops to advance from Smyrna to, 238; Turkish war-making power at, 249; Richmond sees, as 'open' to British naval power, 258; Balfour sees Dardanelles victory as putting 'under our control', 272; means of effecting morale of Turks in, 276; Grey's hopes of 'creating a scare' at, 277; Churchill wants 50,000 troops to occupy in event of revolution at, 288–9; Russians estimate 50,000 troops needed to capture, 292; Churchill believes capture of possible with 'a comparatively small number of troops', 301; Asquith asserts importance of occupation of, 304; Churchill wants 115,000 troops for capture of, 307; Churchill insists capture of is 'only a means to an end', 315, 331; apparently promised to Russia by Grey as early as 1908, 320; War Council discusses future of (3 March 1915), 321; Admiral Carden's instructions (5 March 1915) for the surrender of, 327; War Council discusses the future of (10 March 1915), 332, 334–5; report of dissension in, 395–6; Churchill on the importance of the capture of, 411; Churchill asserts (18 June 1915) that Britain has the power to capture, 498–9; British proposal for eventual Russian annexation of, 509; Curzon willing to allow Turks to keep, in return for peace (Oct 1915), 550; 'take it, and take it soon, and take it while time remains' (Churchill, 15 Nov 1915), 567; Churchill wants troops used to threaten (May 1916), 772; MAPS, 29, 545, 838, 841, 842
- Contemporary Personalities* (Lord Birkenhead): quoted, on Churchill, 58
- Cordingley, John Walter: recalls hostile opinions of Churchill, 50
- Corfu: 395
- Cornwall* (British cruiser): and preparations for battle of Falkland Islands, 182
- Cornwallis* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*; at Gallipoli landings, 405
- Cornwallis-West, George Frederick Myddelton: commands a battalion in the Royal Naval Division, 49; at siege of Antwerp, 122*n*, 130
- Coronel (Chile): prelude to battle off, 156; British squadron defeated at, 157–8; Cabinet bewildered by news of, 158–9; Churchill defends Admiralty's policy at time of, 159–60; criticisms of Churchill for British defeat at, 177, 531; the search to avenge, 182–4; Churchill sends Bonar Law documents concerning (19 May 1915), 455; Churchill wants Asquith to publish documents concerning, 532, 533; Churchill recounts (Dec 1915) defeat of, 620
- Costeker, John Henry Dives: killed at Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 409
- Council of War: meets on 5 Aug 1914, 33–4
- Coventry Ordnance Works, 535

- Cox and Company (bankers): 511
- Cradock, Sir Christopher: his instructions, 156; defeated by von Spee off Coronel, and drowned (1 Nov 1914), 157; Asquith critical of, 158; Churchill's criticisms of, regarded as suspect, 159; Churchill sends criticisms of, to leading Conservatives, 160; his death avenged, 182-3; Fisher believes there was 'inexplicable folly' in defeat of, 184; Churchill sends Bonar Law documents concerning defeat of, 455; Churchill wants Asquith to publish documents concerning, 533; Churchill shows C. P. Scott documents concerning, 541; Churchill recounts (Dec 1915) his 'insisting on fighting', 620
- Crease, Thomas Evans: 250, 394; and the crisis of May 1915, 435, 436, 438, 441, 452, 467; and Fisher's preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 803
- Creedy, Herbert James: 515, 604
- Cressy* (British cruiser): torpedoed (22 Sept 1914), 85-6; loss of a cause of criticism, 143, 159, 184-5, 532
- Crete: *Indomitable* diverted to Dardanelles from, 209
- Crewe, 1st Marquess of (Robert Offley Ashburton Crewe-Milnes): at 10 Downing Street (1 Aug 1914), 25; and Churchill's mission to Antwerp, 119; Lord Hardinge complains to, 139; questions Churchill about employment at sea of naval cadets, 171; opposed to taking initiative against Turkey (17 Aug 1914), 195; his son-in-law killed in action, 228; Hankey's proposal for attack on Turkey circulated to, 229; at War Council (7 Jan 1915), 242; Asquith's praise of, 330; at War Council (10 March 1915), 334; informs Hardinge of territorial discussions in London about the future of Turkey, 344; learns of benefits to be gained by India after a British victory at the Dardanelles, 349; at War Council (19 March 1915), 355-6; opposes abandoning Gallipoli attack (14 May 1915) because of 'its effect in India', 432; becomes Lord President of the Council (May 1915), 470; at Dardanelles Committee (12 June 1915), 494; doubts possibility of obtaining Bulgaria as an ally (end June 1915), 505; at Calais Conference (July 1915), 526-7; and the War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (Aug 1915), 527-9; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; and the growing anti-Kitchener feeling (Oct 1915), 557, 559; opposes Gallipoli evacuation, 601; a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683
- Cromarty (Ross and Cromarty): 282
- Cromer, Earl (Evelyn Baring): Churchill recalls (Oct 1916) his attitude towards a military landing on the Gallipoli Peninsula to, 381; Churchill writes to, about procedures to be adopted by the Dardanelles Commission (12 Aug 1916), 804; his reply (19 Sept 1916), 808-9; Churchill protests about *Daily Mail* accusations to (17 Oct 1916), 812
- Cromer (Norfolk): Mrs Churchill staying at, 4, 6, 39, 44-5
- Cromwell, Oliver; Churchill unable to name battleship after (1912), 87
- Crooks, William: speaks at London Opera House (11 Sept 1914), 75
- Crow, Francis Edward: arrested by Turks, 217, 219
- Crowe, Sir Eyre: 69, 191-2
- Crystal Palace (London): Royal Naval Division Depot at, 169
- Ctesiphon (Turkey): British Force defeated at (24 Nov 1915), 590n
- Cumine, George J. G. G.: Churchill describes as 'a vy good soldier', but takes risks, 665
- Cunliffe, Walter: on City attitude to coming of war, 23
- Cunliffe-Owen, Frederick: proposals of (17 Aug 1914), for British action against Turkey, 199-200

- Cunningham, Andrew Browne: commands *Scorpion* off Smyrna, 217*n*
- Curragh Mutiny (March 1914): J. E. B. Seely resigns after, 83
- Curtiss Company: Churchill buys American flying boats from, 66*n*
- Curzon of Kedleston, 1st Earl of (George Nathaniel Curzon): Kitchener drives to resignation (1905), 312; becomes Lord Privy Seal (May 1915), 470; Churchill proposes Bulair landing to, 494; at Dardanelles Committee (17 June 1915), 497; wants a further division sent to the Dardanelles (5 July 1915), 508; opposes Churchill's visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 513; and the War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (Aug 1915), 527-9; discusses conduct of war with Churchill and Lloyd George (Sept 1915), 530-1; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; and Churchill's views on Bulgaria, 545; wishes to send British help to Serbia (Oct 1915), 556; believed by Margot Asquith to be part of a Lloyd George-Churchill plot (Oct 1915), 556-7; Lady Randolph Churchill invites to dine (Nov 1915), 482; Lady Randolph Churchill dines with (Nov 1915), 594; informs Churchill of Cabinet crisis (Nov 1915), 601-4; opposed to the evacuation of Gallipoli, 617; rejects compromise over conscription (Dec 1915), 618; Churchill shows front-line trenches to (6 Feb 1916), 661-2; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 688; Churchill sees as a future Cabinet colleague, 697; and talk of an Air Ministry, 705; and the renewed conscription crisis (April 1916), 750-1; becomes President of the Air Board (May 1916), 763, 767, 777; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 820; vetoes Churchill's inclusion in Lloyd George's Cabinet (7 Dec 1916), 823
- Cushing* (American steamship): attacked by a German aeroplane (28 April 1915), 463*n*
- Cust, Sir Charles Leopold: critical of Royal Naval Division, 306
- Cuxhaven (Germany): Fisher wants British naval attack on, 258, 346; Churchill refers to naval air raid on, 721, 764
- Cyprus: 298-9, 300*n*; MAP, 838
- Daily Chronicle*: reports on anti-Asquith intrigues (March 1915), 363; 688, 711*n*, 750
- Daily Express*: bought by Sir Max Aitken, 13*n*
- Daily Mail*: critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 126; said to have given important information to Germans, 270; demands Kitchener's dismissal (May 1915), 466; and the Marconi affair (1912), 623*n*; and an American schoolboy howler (Feb 1916), 702; not sympathetic to Churchill (March 1916), 748; describes Churchill as 'a megalomaniac' (Oct 1916), 811-12; Churchill seeks to defend himself against, 817
- Daily Mirror*: 552*n*
- Daily News*: publishes defence of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 128
- Dallas, Alister Grant: sent by Kitchener to Antwerp, 101, 103, 107, 108, 109
- Dalmatia (Austria-Hungary): Lloyd George favours British attack on, 237; MAP 842
- Dalziel, James Henry: and Churchill's criticisms of Asquith (March 1916), 711, 713, 736-7, 739; a member of the Liberal War Committee, 735*n*; presses Asquith to publish Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 783, 784, 785
- Damascus (Turkey): Captain Richmond wants British troops to capture, instead of landing at Gallipoli, 389; MAP, 838
- Danube, River: Lloyd George anticipates British naval action on, 252-3;

Danube, River—*continued*

Balfour believes victory at Dardanelles will open passage to, 272; Fisher to design gunboats for, 275; Churchill suggests allied force might advance up, 302, 308; Hankey sees British flotilla on, as centre of an allied attack on Austria-Hungary, 318; Austrian forces cross (Oct 1915), 549; MAP, 842 'Danzig': used as code name for attack on Borkum, 242

Dardanelles (Turkey): *Goeben* and *Breslau* pass through (10 Aug 1914), 40, 193-4; Admiral Limpus to escort *Sultan Osman I* through, 191; Limpus refers (26 Aug 1914) to possibility of landing near, 198; Cunliffe-Owen reports (27 Aug 1914) military force needed to command properly, 199-200; Churchill suggests plan for joint Anglo-Greek action against, 204-5; *Goeben* and *Breslau* to be sunk if they emerge from, 206; forts manned by German officers, 206; Enver refuses German request to close, 207; Grey refuses to allow Limpus to command British forces at, 208; Greek plan to capture reported to be ready (9 Sept 1914), 209; British prevent Turkish torpedo boat from leaving, 212; minefield laid across (29 Sept 1914), 213; Admiral Slade advises 'target practice' against forts of, 215; outer forts bombarded (3 Nov 1914), 218; Asquith reports Churchill as wanting 'heroic adventure against' (5 Dec 1914), 223; Hankey discusses territorial future of, 230; Kitchener favours 'demonstration' at (2 Jan 1915), 233; Carden asked about possibility of forcing (3 Jan 1915), 233-4; Carden believes in possibility of forcing, 237-8; Kitchener describes as 'the most suitable objective' (8 Jan 1915), 244; preparations for naval attack on, 248-60, 267; Churchill recalls need to take risks at, 262; Fisher's growing opposition to an attack on, 263-5, 268-71; War Council

Dardanelles (Turkey)—*continued*

(28 Jan 1915) discusses importance of victory at, 271-2; Admiralty work out plans for attack on, 276-7, 279-81; set-back at, 286; criticism of naval plans for, 286-7; the search for troops to be used in attack on, 288-9, 291-8; bombardment of outer forts of (19 Feb 1915), 300; further bombardment delayed, 301; the search for troops continues, 302-5; the bombardment resumed (25 Feb 1915), 305; War Council discusses need for troops at (26 Feb 1915), 307-11; outer forts bombarded (25-6 Feb 1915), 314-15; Churchill wants Greek naval help at, 316; speculation about the territorial future of, 324; Churchill informs Grey of Admiralty confidence to force, *without* military assistance, 325; difficulties of naval progress at, 330-1; shortage of ammunition in forts at (11 March 1915), 337; the naval attack on (18 March 1915), 351-4; the aftermath of the naval attack (March-April 1915), 355-80; Fisher declares (2 April 1915) '*entirely exhausts my time*', 382; Churchill's desire for a renewed attack on (April 1915), 382-6; and the mine danger at, 387, 390-1, 399-400; and Fisher's resignation (April-May 1915), 394-6, and chapter 13, 411-47, 474-5; Churchill's responsibility for, 463-4, 488; possible further attacks at (June-Oct 1915), 496, 498, 500, 516; Churchill's proposed visit to (July 1915), 510-14; Hankey at (Aug 1915), 518; Churchill wants publication of documents concerning (Sept-Nov 1915), 532-3; Churchill refers to attack on as a legitimate gamble (15 Nov 1915), 569; Churchill seeks vindication over (1916), 682; Asquith agrees to publish documents concerning, 778-9, 782-4; Asquith decides *not* to publish documents concerning, but to set up a committee of inquiry into (20 July 1916), 789; MAPS, 235, 353, 519, 838, 840

- Dardanelles, The* (Sir Charles Callwell): quoted, 786n
- Dardanelles Commission: Churchill's evidence to, 200, 220, 222, 248, 250, 262, 273, 274, 280, 312, 332, 337, 354, 364, 365, 377; Fisher's evidence to, 273; Sir Ian Hamilton's evidence to, 347; Hankey's memorandum for (1 Sept 1916), 294, 349-50; Hankey's memorandum for (31 Aug 1916), 379-80; Graeme Thomson's evidence to, 297; Asquith agrees to the establishment of, 789-90; Churchill prepares his evidence for, 790-1, 798, 802-8; Churchill appears before (28 Sept 1916), 809; Churchill protests about *Daily Mail* allegations to (17 Oct 1916), 812; Churchill's reaction to the evidence of others to (Oct 1916), 814; Churchill's hopes of vindication from, 816; Churchill protests to about allegations concerning Kitchener's role over the Dardanelles, 817-19
- Dardanelles Committee, the: successor to the War Council (q.v.), 485; meets (7 June 1915), 494; meets (12 June 1915), 494-5; meets (17 June 1915), 497; meets (25 June 1915), 502; Churchill tired of bickering in, 505; meets (5 July 1915), 508; meets (24 July 1915), 514-15; meets (19 Aug 1915), 522-3; meets (20 Aug 1915), 523; meets (27 Aug 1915), 525; meets (3 Sept 1915), 526; meets (23 Sept 1915), 538; meets (24 Sept 1915) 539; meets (11 Oct 1915), 549-51; meets (14 Oct 1915), 552-4; Churchill circulates memorandum to (20 Oct 1915) advocating use of gas at Dardanelles, 555; Kitchener's position on, 557, 559; Asquith decides to bring to an end (Nov 1915), 560; final meeting of (6 Nov 1915), 563; replaced by Cabinet War Committee (q.v.), 563
- Davies, David: doubts Churchill's chances of office after Asquith's fall, 816-17
- Davies, Richard Bell: commands aircraft squadron in France, 67
- Dawnay, Guy Payan: sees *Majestic* sink at Dardanelles (May 1915), 472; his visit to London (Sept 1915), 539-41
- Dawnay, Hugh: Churchill dines with, at GHQ (16 Sept 1914), 81; killed in action, 228
- Dawson, Margaret Jane: 24
- de Bartolomé, Charles Martin: assists Admiralty War Group, 185-6, 250, 254; angered by criticism of Royal Naval Division, 306; wants de Robeck to make a second attempt to force the Narrows by ships alone, 366; and Fisher's opposition to the Dardanelles, 394, 429; his expertise cited by Churchill in defence of the Dardanelles operation, 813
- de Broqueville, Charles Marie Pierre Albert: appeals to Allies for help in defence of Antwerp, 101-2, 104-8, 110
- de Bunsen, Sir Maurice William Ernest: 391
- Dedeagatch (Bulgaria): 327, 544, 553; MAPS, 545, 840
- Deedes, Wyndham Henry: tells Kitchener purely naval attack at Dardanelles is bound to fail, 288
- Defence* (British light cruiser): ordered to South America, 157-8, 182
- de Forest, Maurice Arnold: summoned to Dover, 11; one of Churchill's Austrian friends, 45; commands armoured car squadron in France, 68
- de Graaff, Heinrich: says Fisher is thought to be 'of consequence' in Germany, 146
- Deguisse, Victor: at Antwerp, 109-16
- Delcassé, Théophile: in London (8 Feb 1915), 278; agrees to send French troops to Dardanelles, 281; informs Grey of Russian refusal to allow Greek troops to participate in attack on the Dardanelles, 328
- Delennelle Farm (Ploegsteert, Belgium): company billets at, 650; shelled, 660; MAP, 649

- de Mole, L. E.: the true inventor of the tank, 537ⁿ
- Denmark: independence of, 1; Churchill's hope of winning to allied cause, 225-6, 228, 246; MAP 19
- Derby, 17th Earl of (Edward George Villiers Stanley): appointed Director of Recruiting (5 Oct 1915), 558, 618, 752; supports Milner's appeal for compulsory military service (April 1916), 755; writes to Lloyd George to protest about Churchill (19 Aug 1916), 800-1; becomes Secretary of State for War (Dec 1916), 822
- de Robeck, John Michael: second-in-command of British naval forces at Dardanelles, 254, 266; becomes Commander-in-Chief of naval forces at Dardanelles, 348; and the naval attack of 18 March 1915, 351-2, 354-7; urged not to appear to be suspending operations (20 March 1915), 358; opposes Hamilton's plan to move troops from Mudros to Egypt (20 March 1915), 360; and the decision to delay a second naval attack until at least 14 April 1915, 363-6; and Churchill's desire to influence to renew the attack, 367-70; Hamilton believes to be 'a very sound pusher', 371; Hamilton encourages to renew naval attack, 372-3; informs Admiralty (26 and 27 March 1915), that only a combined naval *and* military attack can lead to victory at the Dardanelles, 375-7, 379; reports (3 April 1915) on preparations for a combined attack, 382-3; Churchill advises on the problem of floating-mines (6 April 1915), 387; Churchill supports naval requirements of, 388; reports on his preparations against mines, 390; his plans to penetrate into the Sea of Marmara, 391; opposed to further delay at Dardanelles (10 April 1915), 392; will attack forts at the Narrows in conjunction with army, 393; completes plans for landing army on Gallipoli Peninsula, 397;
- de Robeck, John Michael—*continued*
learns of Turkish shortage of ammunition (22 April 1915), 400-1; wants a dawn landing at Gallipoli, 402; reports to Churchill on Gallipoli landings, 406-7; said to be willing to try to penetrate to Sea of Marmara within two weeks of Gallipoli landings, 408; reports (29 April 1915) on military activity at Helles and Anzac, 412-13; contemplates the renewal of a purely naval attack on the Narrows, 417-18; Churchill informs of withdrawal of *Queen Elizabeth* from the Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 423; Fisher reluctant to allow him to take any further naval initiative (13 May 1915), 425-6, 428; informed (13 May 1915) that 'the moment for an independent naval attempt to force the narrows has passed', 429; Fisher agrees (14 May 1915) to send some reinforcements to, 435; Churchill decides (14 May 1915) to send two further submarines to, 536; Churchill's final telegram to (26 May 1915), 471; Churchill presses Balfour (29 May 1915) to send extra submarines to, 485; Dardanelles Committee decides (7 June 1915) to send reinforcements to, 494; and the use of Monitors (Sept 1915), 541-2; and the possibility of a renewed naval attack (Oct 1915), 548
- Deterding, Henri Wilhelm August: Fisher advises Churchill to give him a knighthood, 16-17; on German preparations to invade Holland, 375
- Dieppe (France): Clementine Churchill tries to devise scheme to meet her husband at (Jan 1916), 644
- Dixmude (Belgium): Marine reconnaissance to, 56
- Djavid, Mehmed: Churchill meets (1910), 189; proposes Anglo-Turkish Alliance (1911), 190; angered by seizure of Turkish ships (Aug 1914), 193; said to know that 'anything but neutrality means ruin', 198; argues

- Djavid, Mehmed—*continued*
 merits of neutrality and intervention, 213
- Djemal, Ahmed: his day of glory, 191; Churchill's message to, 196; his reported pro-French leanings, 198; reported reluctant to see Turkey committed to Germany, 206; Churchill seeks to influence, 107–8; records fears of sudden attack by Entente powers, 212; argues merits of neutrality and intervention, 213; leads Turkish military forces against Suez Canal, 279
- Dogger Bank: loss of three cruisers from patrol of, 85; naval action in, 261–2
- Donald, Robert: 688, 703, 750
- Doris* (British light cruiser): at Alexandria (18–22 Dec 1914), 222, 233*n*; report of action circulated to Cabinet (8 Feb 1915), 279; Churchill cites psychological effect of the exploits of, in defence of the Dardanelles operation, 813
- Douai (France): Royal Naval Air Service reconnaissance over, 65; Marine Brigade units at, 73, 75; aircraft and armoured cars based on, 88; Churchill looks across plain of, 624–5; MAPS, 75, 88, 575
- Douglas, Sir Charles Wittingham Horsley: receives orders from Kitchener, 34; Churchill asks to examine plan to seize Gallipoli Peninsula, 202
- Douglas, James: publishes defence of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 128; foresees Churchill–Beresford–Carson combination (Dec 1915), 590
- Dover (Kent): Kitchener intercepted at, 28; anti-aircraft defence line starts at, 66; Churchill's train recalled to London while on way to (3 Oct 1914), 103; Churchill's train returns to, 105; Arthur Asquith telegraphs from, 112; Churchill returns to from Antwerp (6 Oct 1914), 120; Zeppelin drops bomb on (24 Dec 1914), 238–9; anti-Zeppelin force of sixty aeroplanes assembled between London and, 240; Fisher's reaction to report that British Dover (Kent)—*continued*
 merchant ships are afraid to leave, 338
- Dover Strait: Fleet sails secretly through, 9; sealed against German ships, 34, 36
- Dresden* (German light cruiser): 156; at battle of Falkland Islands, 183–4; in hiding, 264
- Drummond, James Eric: against keeping loss of *Audacious* secret, 142; his views on the ministerial crisis (Oct–Nov 1915), 560
- Dublin: Easter uprising in (April 1916), 761
- Dublin* (British light cruiser): attempts to thwart escape of *Goeben*, 41
- Duchy of Lancaster: Churchill appointed Chancellor of (May 1915), 468; Churchill handed seals of, 472; Churchill's first weeks at (May–June 1915), 482–5; Churchill frustrated at (Sept 1915), 530; Lloyd George suggested for (Nov 1915), 560; Churchill resigns from, 563; Edward Marsh seeks missing key of, 595
- Dundee (Angus): Churchill's speech at (5 June 1915) defending his work as First Lord, 488–91
- Dunkirk (France): Royal Naval Air Service base established at, 65, 67–9, 240; German threat to, 72; Churchill's first wartime visit to (10 Sept 1914), 72–3; Churchill's second wartime visit to (22 Sept 1914), 88–90; Churchill's third wartime visit to (26 Sept 1914), 92; Joffre asked to send troops to, 102; Royal Marines forced to return to, 103, 105; Churchill expected at (3 Oct 1914), 106; Royal Naval Division to be sent to Antwerp via, 107, 112; General Rawlinson on way to Antwerp from (5 Oct 1914), 114–15; British forces disembarking at (6 Oct 1914), 116; Churchill's visits to described as 'useless', 119; French fear of German advance to, 135; 'damnable' if Germans reach, 136; Churchill maintains air base at, 162; Churchill proposes to visit (17 Dec 1914), 164–5; MAPS, 75, 575

- Durham: miners from, in Royal Naval Division, 500
- Düsseldorf (Germany): British air raid on Zeppelin sheds at (22 Sept 1914), 89; second air raid on (9 Oct 1914), 122-3, 136, 146; Churchill refers to air raids on, 721, 764; MAP, 88
- Eady, Griffin: negotiating with the Turks, 359
- Eastchurch (Kent): Churchill learns to fly at (1912-14), 65; anti-aircraft flights based on, 66
- Easter Island (Pacific Ocean): reached by von Spee, 156
- East Hertfordshire: by-election at (10 March 1916), 733, 736
- Ebenezer Farm: Battalion HQ when Churchill serving with Grenadier Guards (Nov-Dec 1915), 576, 579; MAP, 577
- Eberhardt, Andrei Avgustovich: his instructions, 344
- Edgar* (British cruiser): at the Dardanelles, 686-7
- Edwards, John Hugh: asks for details about escape of *Goeben* and *Breslau*, 170
- Egypt: and defence of Suez Canal, 9; Kitchener anxious to return to, 12; number of Muslims in, 189*n*; fear of Turkish threat to (17 Aug 1914), 195; possibility of putting pressure on Turkey from, 200; Indian troops to be halted at to impress Turks, 205; imminent Turkish invasion reported (23 Oct 1914), 214; Cabinet expresses fears for (30 Oct 1914), 215; Margot Asquith not worried about Turkish threat to (5 Nov 1914), 219; Turkish threats renewed (end Nov 1914), 220, 222; danger to if Russia defeated, 233; Turkish attack towards (Feb 1915), 279; Asquith believes troops for Dardanelles force could be found in, 286; Kitchener says Australian and New Zealand troops no longer needed for defence of, 291-3; Churchill wants troops for Dardanelles assembled in, 300; troops being held ready in, 304;
- Egypt—*continued*
Churchill on Britain's position in, 333; Hamilton leaves for Lemnos from, 392; Kitchener raises spectre of Muslim rising in, 423; Churchill wants troops from to reinforce Gallipoli offensive, 522; Kitchener sees danger to if Gallipoli evacuated (Oct 1915), 549; Kitchener sees danger to, if Gallipoli *not* evacuated (Dec 1915), 602; Churchill wants troops at used elsewhere (Jan-May 1916), 686, 692, 772; Churchill wants African troops trained in (May 1916), 772-3; MAPS, 235, 838
- Ekersund (Norwegian fiord): possible British base, 21; MAP, 19
- Elbe, River (Germany): British plan for raid up, 20; Churchill wants to control approaches of, 37, 52; Churchill fears submarines will sail from, 72; Dutch neutrality a barrier to control of, 98; Churchill's suggestion to send old battleships up (24 Oct 1914), 140; Churchill wishes to blockade German bases at mouth of, 180; MAPS, 19, 53
- Elles, Hugh Jamieson: summons Churchill to St Omer (Jan 1916), 679*n*
- Elliot, Sir Francis Edmund Hugh: reports Greeks not afraid of attack by Turkey, 205-6; reports Greek king in favour of joining the Allies, 316; passes on Churchill's appeal for Greek naval participation at Dardanelles, 316; reports Greek king's refusal to accept a pro-allied policy, 329; reports Greek reaction to Dardanelles bombardment, 335, 336; reports renewed Greek interest in giving military support at Gallipoli, 412
- Elliot, Maxine: Churchill visits (7 Dec 1915), 600
- Ellis, Charles Edward: Lloyd George describes as 'a first class 2nd rate man', 623
- Emden (Germany): German fleet secure at, 140; Churchill wants British landing at, 244, 246; MAP, 842
- Emden* (German light cruiser): sinking merchant ships in Indian Ocean, 137,

Emden—continued

139, 143-4; the Russian light cruiser *Askold* among the ships searching for, 327ⁿ

Emmott, 1st Baron (Alfred Emmott): reports Churchill's Cabinet proposal of 26 Aug 1914, 57; strongly opposes Churchill being made Colonial Secretary, 460

Empty Spaces, *The* (Sarah Churchill): 120ⁿ

Enchantress (Admiralty yacht): Fisher joins Churchill on, 145

Enfield Lock (Middlesex): Churchill speaks at (18 Sept 1915), 534

Enos (Turkey): Birdwood wants troops landed between head of Gulf of Xeros and, 392; Churchill proposes despatch of Russian troops from Black Sea via Archangel to (May 1915), 428; Churchill wants as possible British base against Bulgaria (Oct 1915), 544; British military landing at proposed (Oct 1915), 553; MAPS, 545, 840

Enos-Midia line (Turkey): Churchill proposes inviting Bulgarians to advance to, 302, 307, 315; MAP, 840-1

Enver Pasha: Churchill attracted to (1909), 188; Churchill meets in London (1910), 189; his pro-German policy strengthened, 193; Churchill's personal appeals to, 194, 195-6; said to welcome increasing German influence, 198; his dominance over Turkish navy resented by Djemal, 206; refuses German request to close Dardanelles, 207; impressed by German power, 212; argues merits of neutrality and intervention, 213; Churchill hopes, will abandon German cause when British force Dardanelles, 249; said to want 'a fight to the bitter end', 395; appoints Liman von Sanders to command Turkish Fifth Army at Dardanelles (March 1915), 400ⁿ; admits (Jan 1916) that Turkey was on verge of defeat in March 1915, 693

Ephesus (Turkey): F. E. Smith favours landing at, 237; MAPS, 838, 842

Epirus (Albania): 230

Epoca: 116ⁿ

Erzerum (Turkey): Djemal Pasha records fears of Russian attack on, 212; battle of (1877), 317; MAP, 839

Esbjerg (Denmark): possible British base: 20, 21; MAP, 19

Esher, 2nd Viscount (Reginald Baliol Brett): informs Churchill of impact of his Guildhall remarks, 63; George V describes Churchill's 'monstrous' behaviour to, 87; Stamfordham informs of disagreement between Churchill and George V, 88; and Fisher's return to Admiralty, 154-5; reports Kitchener's words to Churchill about Dardanelles 'You get through! I will find the men', 288; Hankey tells of his scepticism of success at the Dardanelles without 'a biggish army' at hand, 331; describes attack on Dardanelles as 'the finest stroke of the war' (early March 1915), 345; informs Stamfordham of criticism of Churchill's visit to France (6-10 May 1915), 425; and Churchill's proposed visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 514; J. A. Spender writes to, about Churchill's resignation speech (Nov 1915), 569; at St Omer with Churchill (Dec 1915), 589-90; critical of Churchill accepting command of a Brigade, 608-9, 616; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 729

Essen (Germany): Churchill plans air raid against, 175; Churchill wants military advance from Dutch coast towards, 245; MAP, 53

Euphrates, River (Turkey): British control mouth of (Dec 1914), 222-3; proposed extension of British control over whole valley of, 509

Europe: Churchill describes Italy as the 'harlot' of, 426ⁿ

Evening News: 552ⁿ

Ewing, Sir James Alfred: in charge of Room 40 at Admiralty, 179

Exmouth (British battleship): to sail to Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 422, 423

- Falaba* (British steamship): torpedoed (28 March 1915), 463*n*
- Falkland Islands, battle of: preparations for, 182, 262; von Spee defeated at, 183; Churchill elated by, 184; a personal triumph for Fisher, 185; releases British ships for service elsewhere, 250; Churchill sends Bonar Law documents concerning, 455; Churchill recounts victory of, 620
- Fao (Turkey): Government of India land military force at (7 Nov 1914), 221; MAP, 839
- Far East: British squadron reinforced, 8; British interests in, 42
- Fayolle, Marie Emile: visited by Churchill on the western front, 598
- Feilding, Geoffrey Percy Thynne: 573
- Ferdinand, King of Bulgaria: reported to be upset by prospect of British victory at the Dardanelles (March 1915), 335; pro-German, 348
- Fergusson, Charles: praises the improvement in Churchill's battalion, 646; Churchill obtains leave to return to England from, 759-60
- Fermanagh (Irish county): boundary dispute of, 4
- Festubert (France): battle at (9 May 1915), 523; MAP, 575
- Fighting Line, The* (Winston S. Churchill): penny pamphlet (published 13 July 1916), 776
- First Fleet (Grand Fleet): at Spithead (19 July 1914), 3; sails through Dover Strait into North Sea (29 July 1914), 9; Jellicoe becomes Commander-in-Chief of (2 Aug 1914), 26; Churchill visits at Loch Ewe (17 Sept 1914), 81, 85
- First Hundred Thousand, The* (Ian Hay): 630*n*
- Fisher, Cecil: 49
- Fisher, John Arbuthnot, First Baron: arrives at Admiralty (30 July 1914), 13; favours Jellicoe to command First Fleet, 14; enthuses to Balfour about Churchill's courage, 16; gives Churchill advice and encouragement, 16-17; Fisher, John Arbuthnot—*continued*
and formation of Royal Naval Division, 49, 51; praises Churchill's military forecast of 1911, 64; critical of Churchill's 'Dunkirk Circus' and Admiralty 'sycophants', 137; Haldane advises Churchill to bring back to Admiralty, 144; Churchill's admiration for, 145; his return as First Sea Lord, 147-56, 157, 159; Kitchener suggests as First Lord, 166; at War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; Asquith describes face of, 176*n*; receives copy of intercepted German naval telegrams, 179; wants vigorous coastal offensive towards Ostend, 180; urges importance of offensive naval action to War Council (1 Dec 1914), 181; and Battle of the Falkland Islands, 182-4; as First Sea Lord, 185-7; and plans for bombardment at Dardanelles, 215, 216, 220; wants Greece to attack Gallipoli, 221; Churchill urges need for Baltic offensive on (22 Dec 1914), 225; Hankey proposal for an attack on Turkey circulated to, 229; Churchill informs of plan for North Sea offensive (3 Jan 1915), 234; enthusiastic for attack on Dardanelles (3 Jan 1915), 234-6, and (4 Jan 1915), 237; threatens to resign (4 Jan 1915), 238-40; tells War Council of navy's readiness for a North Sea offensive (7 Jan 1915), 242; enthusiastic for massive troop landings in Holland (9 Jan 1915), 245; believes capture of Constantinople possible if Greek troops act in concert with British naval attack, 247; his part in the planning of the naval attack at the Dardanelles, 253-7, 266, 275; wants British troops landed in Holland (18 Jan 1915), 258; his growing unease about Dardanelles operation, 259-60, 262-5, 268-70; at War Council (28 Jan 1915), 270-3; wants greater French naval participation at Dardanelles, 276; approves Richmond's appeal for troops at Dardanelles (15 Feb 1915), 287;

Fisher, John Arbuthnot—*continued*

favours annexation of Lemnos, 299–300, 322; stresses need for victory at Dardanelles before arrival of Austrian submarines, 323; sceptical of victory at the Dardanelles (4 March 1915), 326; critical of Keyes' appointment as Chief of Staff at Dardanelles, 326; on need to prevent Germany building a fleet after the war, 334; approves (11 March 1915) pressing forward with the naval attack at the Dardanelles, 336–7; his reaction to reports of German submarines passing through Rumania and Bulgaria on way to Turkey, 338; and the problem of mines at the Dardanelles, 345; wants military co-operation, greater activity and greater speed at the Dardanelles (15 March 1915), 346; insists that the 'decisive theatre' remains in the North Sea and the Baltic (16 March 1915), 347–8; orders further battleships to the Dardanelles after the naval setback of 18 March 1915, 354; at War Council (19 March 1915), 355; learns of Turkish ammunition deficiencies, 357–8; learns of secret negotiations with Turkey, 358–9; wants greater French participation at Dardanelles, and British destroyers sent back to home waters (20 March 1915), 360; unwilling (23 March 1915) to agree to Churchill's proposal to insist upon an immediate renewed naval attack at Dardanelles, 364–70; worried about German ammunition on way to Turkey (end-March 1915), 371; discusses with Churchill (25 March 1915) plan for a British offensive in the North Sea, 373; and the danger of a German invasion of Holland, 375, 378–9; unwilling to send further reinforcements to de Robeck (2 April 1915), 382, 383; complains to Jellicoe about the Dardanelles (4 April 1915), 384–5; complains to Churchill about the Dardanelles (5 April 1915), 385–6; answers criticisms of 2nd, 3rd and 4th

Fisher, John Arbuthnot—*continued*

Sea Lords about the Dardanelles, 388; with Churchill, urges Kitchener to despatch 15-inch howitzer to Dardanelles (8 April 1915), 392; his growing opposition to further reinforcements for de Robeck (11–12 April 1915), 393–4; approves (20 April 1915) despatch of *Goliath* to Dardanelles, 397; Richmond describes as 'useless', 399; writes to Jellicoe (22 April 1915) on prospects of victory at the Dardanelles, 400; Churchill seeks to encourage (3 May 1915) about outcome of the Gallipoli battle, 411–12; declines to encourage rumours of his disagreements with Churchill, 413–14; opposed to further independent naval action at the Dardanelles (11 May 1915), 418–20; Churchill withdraws *Queen Elizabeth* from Dardanelles in attempt to placate (12 May 1915), 422–3; protests to Asquith about the Dardanelles (13 May 1915), 424; his criticism of the Dardanelles effective in preventing Churchill from allowing de Robeck to take any further naval initiative, 425–9; tells War Council (14 May 1915) he was against Dardanelles 'from the beginning', 431; Churchill protests to Asquith about (14 May 1915), 434; Churchill seeks compromise with, about Dardanelles reinforcements (14 May 1915), 435; his resignation (15 May 1915), 437–8; Churchill's appeal to (15 May 1915), 439–40; his refusal to remain as First Sea Lord, 441–4; his attempts to win Conservative support (15 May 1915), 444; Churchill informs his brother of the resignation of (18 May 1915), 451; sends Asquith six conditions under which he will 'guarantee the successful termination of the war' (19 May 1915), 452–3; informs Bonar Law (19 May 1915) of Churchill's offer of 'a seat in the Cabinet', 456; continues to refuse to serve under Balfour (22 May 1915), 467; leaves for Scotland (22

Fisher, John Arbuthnot—*continued*

May 1915), 467; 'does not return' (23 May 1915), 468; and the crisis of May 1915, 474-5, 483-4; appointed by Balfour (July 1915) as Chairman of the Board of Inventions and Research, 506-8; Churchill criticizes former lack of guidance and support given by (15 Nov 1915), 566-7; Churchill's resignation speech described as unfair to, 569; Garvin seeks to act as a mediator between Churchill and (Dec 1915), 621; Garvin wants alliance between Lloyd George, Churchill Carson and, 622; active in London as centre of an anti-Asquith movement (Jan-Feb 1916), 699-705, 708-13; and Churchill's demand for his return to the Admiralty, chapter 23, 716-36; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with, 739; no political advantage for Churchill in an alliance with (May 1916), 761; Churchill writes to 'destiny has not done with you yet' (10 May 1916), 762; Churchill writes to 'You must not be downhearted' (31 May 1916), 776; and Asquith's promised publication of Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 778-9, 783; and the preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (July-Aug 1916), 802-8; Churchill writes to about the premature use of the tank on the Somme (Sept 1916), 810

Fitzgerald, John Hamilton Brinsley: Sir J. French's emissary in London (May 1915), 430

FitzGerald, Oswald Arthur Gerald: 232, 313, 394, 410

Fiume (Austria-Hungary): Kitchener rules out landing at, 244

Flannery, Sir John Fortescue: criticizes Churchill's eighth wartime visit to France (12 May 1915), 424

Fleming, Valentine: sends Churchill description of western front (Nov 1914), 227-8; dines with Churchill at St Omer (2 Dec 1915), 593

Flushing (Holland): 374

Flying boats: Churchill purchases from the United States (Nov 1914), 66

Formidable (British battleship): torpedoed off Devon coast, 184-5; loss of impairs British naval margin, 268

Fosters, Messrs (of Lincoln): and the origin of the tank, 536-7

Foudre (French seaplane carrier): 257

Foule, Mathilde Désirée: a refugee from France, 648n

Four And A Half Years (Dr C. Addison): quoted, 797

Fox, Robert: recalls Churchill's attitude to discipline, 638; and to delousing, 640; and to artillery retaliation against the German trenches, 671

France: Churchill proposes alliance with in 1911, 1; and the crisis of July 1914, 2-3, 6-10, 12; the threat to her troopships, 17; Kitchener fears a German attack on, 21-2; and Britain's obligation to, 23-4; British naval co-operation with, 26, 29, 30, 31; Sir John French unwilling to co-operate further with army of, 59; Churchill's first wartime visit to (10 Sept 1914), 72-3; Churchill's second wartime visit to (16 Sept 1914), 80; Churchill's third wartime visit to (22 Sept 1914), 88, 89; Churchill's fourth wartime visit to (26 Sept 1914), 92; Churchill en route to, 103; Churchill's fifth wartime visit to (6 Dec 1914), 163; navy of has control of Mediterranean, 178; and war with Turkey, 216, 230; Churchill's sixth wartime visit to (29 Jan 1915), 277; Lloyd George does not wish to see in control of Palestine, 343; Churchill's seventh wartime visit to (16 March 1915), 348; Hankey recalls the need to defeat Turkey in order to prevent a collapse of morale in, 350; Churchill's eighth wartime visit to (5-10 May 1915), 414, 416-17, 418, 424-5; Churchill emphasizes weakness of (June 1915), 498; Kitchener's fears of a collapse of military morale in (Aug 1915), 523; Churchill leaves for

France—*continued*

service at the front in (Nov 1915), 571

Frankfurt (Germany): 146

Frankland, Thomas Hugh Colville: killed at Gallipoli landing, 404*n*

Franz Ferdinand, Archduke: assassinated (28 June 1914), 2, 4*n*, 188

Fraser, Lovat: wants Churchill to return to London from the trenches (Dec 1915), 618

French, Sir John Denton Pinkstone: reaches Amiens (14 Aug 1914), 47; reports fall of Namur, 54–5; learns of reinforcements, 57; quarrels with Kitchener, 59–62; sends Churchill account of battle of Marne, 71–2; Churchill visits at his HQ (16–17 Sept 1914), 80–1; naval guns proposed for, 90–1; Clementine Churchill worried by her husband's repeated visits to, 92; his reported orders to fire on German white flags, 94; 7th Division not to go to, 102; Churchill wishes to consult, 103; and defence of Antwerp, 109–10, 124; encourages Churchill after Antwerp, 133; Churchill explains plans for naval activity along German-held Channel coast to, 136; Churchill reports on invasion dispute with Kitchener to, 139; sends Oxfordshire Hussars into action, 160; takes Jack Churchill on to his HQ Staff, 161; dispute with Churchill about Royal Naval Air Service, 162; dispute with Churchill over armoured cars, 163; Churchill keeps informed of British Government policy, 164; Churchill's proposed visit to (Dec 1914), 164–7; his visit to London (20 Dec 1914), 167–8; Churchill tries to soothe, 169; favours sending troops to help Montenegro, 237; Churchill wants reinforcements for coastal offensive sent to (7 Jan 1915), 240–1; denies that German trench line cannot be broken, 243–4; Churchill explains his northern plans to, 246–7; at War Council (13 Jan 1915), 251, 252; Churchill writes to

French, Sir John—*continued*

after Dogger Bank action, 262; Churchill's visit to, at request of War Council (29 Jan 1915), 277; reported willing to send troops to help Serbia, 278; doubts whether British troops could fight well in Serbia, 281; Asquith believes Dardanelles troops can come from other forces than those of, 286; caught up in quarrel between Churchill and Kitchener over use of armoured cars on western front, 289–91; and the German threat to Holland (end-March 1915), 374; reluctant to send 15-inch howitzer to the Dardanelles, 391; Churchill's visit to (9 May 1915) criticized in the House of Commons, 424–5; angered by Asquith's claim that he had sufficient ammunition, 430; George V believes Churchill is intriguing with to remove Kitchener, 454; asks Churchill to visit him (Aug 1915), 530; Churchill suggests as Commander of the British forces against Turkey (Oct 1915), 543; asked to send troops to Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 554; and Churchill's arrival on the western front (Nov 1915), 572–4; Churchill stays at St Omer as guest of (1–18 Dec 1915), 588; and Churchill's proposed promotion to Brigadier-General, 596, 610–11, 612; soon likely to be dismissed (5 Dec 1915), 598; discusses Churchill's future military staff, 599; his own uncertain future, 601; decides to give Churchill command of a Brigade (9 Dec 1915), 605–6; removed from command of the British Expeditionary Force (Dec 1915), 609–617; Churchill sees 'a good deal of' (Aug 1916), 798; alleged to be part of a Lloyd George–Churchill–F. E. Smith intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Oct 1916), 811

Friedrichshafen (Germany): British air raid on (21 Nov 1914), 172–6, 721, 764; MAP, 173

Frimley (Surrey): internment camp for enemy aliens, 143

Fulton, Robert: recalls musical interlude on the western front, 659

Furse, William Thomas: commands Ninth Division (Jan 1916), 628, 635, 637, 646-7; visits Churchill's forward trenches (2 Feb 1916), 659; Churchill lunches with (6 Feb 1916), 661; wants 9th Division to take the initiative, 666; in favour of Churchill commanding a Brigade, 676; urges Churchill to take his place in Parliament as a critic of Asquith's war policies, 738-9, 743, 746; orders Churchill to return from Parliament to the trenches (April 1916), 758; urges Churchill to join Lloyd George and to break the 'futile Govt' (May 1916), 760

Gaba Tepe (Gallipoli Peninsula): 382; Hamilton decides on military landing at, 393; military landings to the north of, at Ari Burnu (25 April 1915), 402-4, 407, 408, 413; Churchill advocates (13 May 1915) semi-permanent landing stages at, 428; German submarine reported (21 May 1915) on way to attack British battleships at, 463; *Triumph* torpedoed off (25 May 1915), 471; MAP, 403

Galicia (Austria-Hungary): Russian defeat in, 431

Gallipoli (Turkey): Liman von Sanders sets up his headquarters in, 400n; MAPS, 235, 840

Gallipoli Peninsula: Admiral Limpus suggests (26 April 1914) 'cutting off and starving', 198; Churchill recalls belief in immediate seizure of (Nov 1914), 200-1, 231; Churchill instructs War Office to examine possibility of seizure of, 202-3; Greek troops considered essential for attack on, 204; Churchill contemplates use of Russian troops against, 205; Greeks believe they have sufficient forces to capture, 209; Churchill believes attack on, to be best means of defending Egypt, 220; Fisher wants Greeks to attack, 221; Asquith reports Churchill wants to

Gallipoli Peninsula—*continued*

organize 'a heroic adventure' against, 223; Fisher wants 'Greeks to go for', 235; Kitchener favours attack on, 237, 244; and need for landing of troops at, 260; Churchill recalls his opposition to troop landings at, 274; Richmond describes 'inferior Turkish troops at' (9 Feb 1915), 279; possibility of troops designated for Salonika being sent to (15 Feb 1915), 288-9; Kitchener believes Australian and New Zealand troops 'sufficient at first' for attack on, 293; discussions at the Committee of Imperial Defence (28 Feb 1907) about possibility of an attack on, 294; Turkish communications too vulnerable to submarine attack, 295; War Council (19 Feb 1915) discusses political effects of occupation of, 296; Kitchener on probable Turkish evacuation of, 307; Churchill welcomes possibility of Greek military participation in attack on, 316; and territorial future of, 321-2; Churchill states that with naval action *alone*, Turks can be forced to evacuate, 325; Greek participation in attack on vetoed by Russia, 328-9; Sir H. Jackson urges (11 March 1915) need for military action on, in conjunction with naval attack, 336; Kitchener worried (13 March 1915) about Turkish military strength on, 341; Fisher wants troops despatched to 'both extremities' of (15 March 1915), 346; Churchill hopes to cut off, by ships at both sides of Bulair Isthmus, 368; de Robeck insists must be occupied by army before any naval attack could succeed, 376; Kitchener supervises plans for military landing on, 381; finally emerges as most favoured landing place, 392-3; military landings on (25 April 1915), 402-20. Churchill advocates (13 May 1915), linking Imbros with anti-submarine nets to, 428; Lloyd George sceptical (14 May 1915) of a British victory at, 432; War Council (14 May

Gallipoli Peninsula—*continued*

1915) discusses possible evacuation of, 432–3; Fisher intends transporting Hamilton's army to Haifa from, 452; Churchill suggests a submarine net 'around the top of', 471; Churchill memorandum (1 June 1915) on danger of prolonged fighting on, 486–7; Churchill's belief in the possibility of a decisive victory on, 489; British proposal for eventual Russian occupation of, 509; Churchill's proposed visit to (mid-July 1915), 510–14; and the renewed attack on (6–10 Aug 1915), 518–22; and the renewed attack on (21–28 Aug 1915), 524; Churchill's confidence in eventual victory at, 534, 546; Churchill sees use for tank on (23 Sept 1915), 538; Dardanelles Committee discusses possible evacuation of (11 Oct 1915), 549–51; Monro advocates evacuation of (31 Oct 1915), 562–3; Cabinet decides to evacuate (23 Nov 1915), 581; Churchill infuriated by idea of evacuation of (Dec 1915), 589; Churchill reflects (Dec 1915) on failure at, 597–8; Cabinet disagreement over evacuation of, 601–2; Churchill believes 'the tale has yet to be told to its conclusion' (15 Dec 1915), 610; evacuation of Helles (Jan 1916), 685–6; Asquith's proposed publication of documents concerning, 778; MAPS, 353, 403, 519, 840

Gardiner, Alfred George: publishes defence of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 128; pre-war criticisms of Churchill, 132

Garvin, James Louis: an opponent of Churchill, 38; seeks commission for his son, 49; defends Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127; Churchill describes his feelings after Antwerp to, 133; publishes defence of Churchill's wartime Admiralty administration (23 May 1915), 468–9; Churchill writes to about effect of his Dundee speech, 491; to dine with Lady Randolph Churchill (Nov 1915), 583; Churchill urges his

Garvin, James Louis—*continued*

wife to keep in touch with (Nov 1915), 587; Lady Randolph Churchill dines with (Nov 1915), 594; encouraged by Churchill to keep in touch with C. P. Scott (Dec 1915), 596, 605; Churchill sends survey of war situation to (8 Dec 1915), 604–5; sends Churchill a description of Lloyd George's position (20 Dec 1915), 618–19; Churchill talks to in London (end Dec 1915), 621; sees Lloyd George, Churchill, Carson and Fisher as a 'fighting quartette' (end Dec 1915), 621–2; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 688; Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty supported by (Jan–Feb 1916), 700, 702–4, 708, 709, 731, 733, 736; and Churchill's criticisms of Asquith's war policies, 739, 741; and Churchill's return to London, 747, 749, 759; advises Fisher in preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Sept 1916), 808

Garvin, Roland Gerard: commissioned, 49

Gas: Churchill advocates use of on Gallipoli Peninsula, 470

Gaulois (French battleship): badly damaged at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 353; refloated (20 March 1915), 360; MAP, 353

George V, King: at naval review (July 1914), 3; learns Asquith's view of European crisis, 4; Churchill informs, about naval measures, 10; and replacement of Callaghan by Jellicoe, 14–15; Asquith reports on Marine expedition to Ostend to, 56; does not like Churchill's 'rats in a hole' remark, 86–8; Asquith reports on Churchill's Antwerp visit to, 112–13; Asquith reports on fall of Antwerp to, 122, 131; and the replacement of Prince Louis as First Lord by Fisher, 148–54, 440, 441; Asquith reports on Turkish policy to, 211, 215, 219; Churchill informs, of Dogger Bank action, 261; Churchill

George V, King—*continued*

informs, of plan of attack on Dardanelles, 280–1; reviews Royal Naval Division at Blandford, 305–6; Churchill refuses to be influenced by wartime abstinence of, 384; informed (8 April 1915) of encouraging prospects at the Dardanelles, 391; Fisher ordered to return to his post in the name of (15 May 1915), 438; Fisher intimates to Bonar Law (15 May 1915) that he has had an audience with, i.e. resigned, 444; Asquith informs, of his belief that Fisher's mind 'is somewhat unhinged' (19 May 1915), 453; glad to 'get rid of Churchill' from Admiralty, 454; Churchill received in audience by (27 May 1915), 472; Asquith informs (7 June 1915), of decision to reinforce Hamilton's army at the Dardanelles, 494; Asquith informs (1 July 1915), of Cabinet discussion on Bulgaria, 506; and Churchill's proposed mission to the Gallipoli Peninsula (July 1915), 512; and the political crisis of December 1916, 820, 822

George Louis Victor Henry Sergius of Battenberg, Prince: 152–3

Gerard, James W.: and the release of Fisher's daughter from internment in Germany, 146*n*

German East Africa: War Council (10 March 1915) discusses territorial future of, 333

Germany: Churchill seeks naval agreement with, 1–2; and willingness to defend Austria against Russian attack, 6; British warning to, 7; and movement of British Fleet to North Sea, 9; intentions towards Belgium, 9–10; attitude to Austria, 21; declares war on Russia, 25; British ultimatum to, 30–1; Japan declares war on, 43; army of, advances through Belgium, 54; High Command disturbed by rumours of British troops at Ostend, 56; and Turkish policy (before 1914), 189; Churchill envisages Rumanian–Greek–Bulgarian–Serb attack on (22 Sept

Germany—*continued*

1914), 210; checks Russian advance at Tannenberg (26–30 Aug 1914), 224; Churchill resurrects plans for naval offensive against, 225, 228, 236; fear of Russia making a negotiated peace with, 260, 321; ready to strike at Serbia, 273, 278; Kitchener on the need to establish goodwill with, once the war is over, 333; War Council (10 March 1915) discusses war aims towards, 334; sends reinforcements to Turkey via Rumania (end March 1915), 371; said to be about to invade Holland (end March 1915), 373–5; Clementine Churchill insists that Churchill is one of the few Cabinet Ministers to possess 'the power, the imagination, the deadliness' to fight, 459; attacks Rumania (1 Sept 1916), 797

Gerrard, Eugene Louis: commands aircraft squadron in France, 67, 69; plans air raid on Zeppelin sheds inside Germany, 88–9

Ghent (Belgium): problem of refugees from, 97–8; difficulty of defending Antwerp from, 99; Belgian army said to be about to withdraw to, 106; British forces to be organized at, 118; French Marine Fusiliers not to proceed beyond, 121; Rawlinson to meet Belgians at, 122; MAP, 99

Gibb, Andrew Dewar: records 'mutinous spirit' at news of Churchill's command of 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers (Jan 1916), 630; and Churchill's first day as battalion commander, 631–2; persuades Churchill to give a correct infantry order, 632; critical of Churchill's attitude to discipline, 638; records Churchill's attack upon lice, 639; and Churchill's battalion route march, 642; and Churchill's attitude to the battalion Medical Officers, 655*n*; describes first week in trenches in battalion war diary, 656–7; records Churchill's 'dissertation on the laying of sandbags', 674; and Churchill's

Gibb, Andrew Dewar—*continued*

final days with the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers (May 1916), 760

Gibbon, Edward: 318

Gibraltar: Churchill offers French Admiralty facilities at, 31; Sir P. Scott travels on *Queen Elizabeth* as far as, 253; Admiral de Robeck at, 266

Gillespie, Mrs: protests to Churchill about the 'scandal' of wounded men being sent back to the trenches (June 1916), 776

Ginnell, Laurence: cries out in the House of Commons 'What about the Dardanelles?' (9 May 1916), 762

Giornale d'Italia: war correspondent of, at Antwerp, 115; Churchill's interview with, on the minorities question, 202

Girouard, Sir Edouard Percy Cranwill: sent by Kitchener to Antwerp, 103

Gladstone, William Ewart: and Turkish atrocities, 188

Glasgow (British light cruiser): off South America, 156–60, 182

Gloucester (British light cruiser): attempts to thwart escape of *Goeben*, 41

Glyn, Ralph George Campbell: 516

Gneisenau (German cruiser): 156, 158, 182; sunk at battle of Falkland Islands, 183

Godalming (Surrey): and Hoe Farm, 493

Goeben (German battle cruiser): about to leave Austrian port of Pola (30 July 1914), 17–18; refused coal at Brindisi and Taranto, 26; followed by British ships, 28; bombards Philippeville, 29; Cabinet refuses Churchill's request to fight before outbreak of war, 30; Churchill anxious to learn fate of, 36; escapes British search, 40–2; escape of a cause for criticism of Churchill, 143, 159, 170, 177, 184; reaches Constantinople (10 Aug 1914), 193; sold to Turks, 194–5; renamed *Jawuz Sultan Selim*, 194*n*; Britain insists on German crew leaving, 196; action against Russia feared (26 Aug 1914), 198; expected to be ready to put to sea (2

Goeben—continued

Sept 1914), 199; Troubridge instructed (8 Sept 1914) to sink, 206; 'flagrant breach of neutrality' by, 207–8; Carden instructed (21 Sept 1914) to sink, 209; Turkish Government warned about (28 Oct 1914), 214; bombards Russian Black Sea ports (29 Oct 1914), 215; defeat of envisaged, 249, 252; Fisher willing to offer two million pounds for (March 1915), 359; known to be in dilapidated condition (Aug 1915), 525

Goliath (British battleship): needed at Dardanelles, 397; sunk at Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 425

Good Hope (British cruiser): sunk at battle off Coronel (1 Nov 1914), 157–8, 182

Gordon, General Charles George (1833–85): 327*n*

Gordon, Edward Ian Drumearn: to command amalgamated 6/7 Royal Scots Fusiliers, 758–9

Gosford, 4th Earl of (Archibald Brabazon Sparrow Acheson): shocked to learn Churchill not yet a Brigadier (Feb 1916), 676

Goulding, Sir Edward Alfred: urges Churchill not to resign from Cabinet (Oct 1915), 560; Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 688; acts as an intermediary between Churchill and Fisher (Feb 1916), 709; Churchill seeks advice of (March 1916), 745; Northcliffe informs of his hostile attitude to Churchill (April 1916), 751; Fisher and Garvin discuss Dardanelles Commission evidence at home of (Sept 1916), 808

Grand Fleet, *see* First Fleet

Granet, Edward John: suggests British air raid on Friedrichshafen, 172

Grant Duff, Evelyn Mountstuart: wants Britain to apologize for alleged violation of Swiss neutrality by naval aviators, 174–5

Great Contemporaries (Winston S. Churchill): quoted, on sending of Fleet to North Sea, 9; on Asquith's letters to

Great Contemporaries—continued

- Venetia Stanley, 217; on Asquith's behaviour in the political crisis of May 1915, 479; on Balfour during the political crisis of December 1916, 822
- Greece: naval rivalry with Turkey, 191; possible British ally against Turkey, 198, 210; possibility of action against Austria, 200; provision of troops to fight Turkey from, 201; Churchill sees 'brilliant but fleeting opportunity' for (31 Aug 1914), 202; troops from considered essential in Gallipoli landings, 203-4; Churchill wants pro-British policy towards, 208; Asquith expects (31 Oct 1914), to join Allies shortly, 216, 219; Fisher wants as Allies' military arm against Gallipoli, 221; lack of troops from, ends British discussions for seizing Gallipoli, 223; Lloyd George wants as ally against Austria, 229; importance of in British plans for the defeat of Turkey, 230, 235, 244, 249; little disposed to help Serbia, 273; Churchill believes could be persuaded to join Allies, 274; Austrian aim to overawe, 277; possibility of troops of to help Serbia, 281-2; Balfour on inducements to, 305; Churchill appeals for immediate naval help from (1 March 1915), 316; Kitchener wants Gallipoli Peninsula handed over to after the war, 321; Churchill wants military support from (4 March 1915), 325-6; Russians refuse to allow as an ally against Turkey, 328-9; Churchill angered by loss of assistance from, 335, 336; Fisher wants Britain to seize the Fleet of, 338; Churchill seeks in vain to overcome Russian veto on help from, 344-5; forced to buy wheat from the United States because of Turkish closure of the Straits, 350; will not get Smyrna after the war unless they join the Allies (April 1915), 383; and effect of the Gallipoli landings on, 412; and the Austrian attack on Serbia (Oct 1915), 549; MAPS, 235, 545, 838, 842
- Greene, Conyngham: 42
- Greene, Sir William Graham: 16; informs Foreign Office that Admiralty have ordered hostilities to begin against Turkey (31 Oct 1914), 216; learns from Foreign Office that Britain and Turkey are at war (5 Nov 1914), 219; opposed to appointment of Graeme Thomson as Director of Transports (Dec 1914), 298; advises Churchill to moderate criticisms of Kitchener in his Dardanelles evidence (Sept 1916), 807
- Greenhill-Gardyne, Alan David: takes Churchill around front-line trenches (12 Feb 1916), 665
- Grenadier Guards: Churchill serves with 2nd Battalion of on the western front (Nov-Dec 1915), 573-89, 605-8; Churchill expects to serve as a company officer with, 613
- Grenfell, Francis: killed in action, 228*n*
- Grenfell, Riversdale: killed in action, 228
- Gretton, John: writes encouragingly to Churchill, 33
- Grey, Sir Edward: and Churchill's proposed meeting with Tirpitz, 1-2; and the European crisis of July 1914, 3-4, 6-7, 18; attitude to France on eve of war, 24; at 10 Downing Street on 1 Aug 1914, 25; and military mobilization, 26; speech in House of Commons (3 Aug 1914), 27; and the *Goeben*, 29; policy towards Japan, 42-4; learns of Heligoland Bight action, 59; opposes bombing of military objectives in German towns, 91-2; mentioned, 95; and the defence of Antwerp, 96-108, 112, 116, 119, 121, 130; Asquith finds 'fussy & jumpy' in Cabinet (23 Oct 1914), 139-40; Churchill reports 'Fisher is already a Court Favourite' to, 153; and alleged violation of Swiss neutrality by naval aviators (21 Nov 1914), 173-6; at War Council (25 Nov 1915), 176; Asquith describes face of, 176*n*; sometimes told of intercepted German naval telegrams, 179; and pre-war Turkish policy, 189-90; and seizure of Turkish battleships, 191-2;

Grey, Sir Edward—*continued*

approves Churchill's appeal to Enver, 194-5; and German sailors on *Goeben* and *Breslau*, 197-8; sceptical of Buxton mission to Balkans, 201; asks Russians about possibility of joint allied action against Turkey, 205; Churchill clashes over Turkish policy with, 207-11; Buxton urges pro-Bulgarian policy on, 213; warns Turkish Government to observe neutrality (28 Oct 1914), 214; and coming of war with Turkey (29 Oct-5 Nov 1914), 215-221; Hankey's proposal for an attack on Turkey circulated to, 229; receives Russian appeal for demonstration against Turks, 232; difficulties of finding Balkan allies, 235; at War Council (7 Jan 1915), 242; favours Zeebrugge operation, 251; wants British naval action in Adriatic, 252, 255; and British command of naval forces at Dardanelles, 256-7, 266-7; believes victory at Dardanelles will determine attitude of all Balkan powers, 272; wants British troops sent to Salonika, 274; and means of shaking Turkish morale, 276; gives Churchill his opinion of Dardanelles operation, 277; gives lunch to Delcassé, 278; circulates War Council with Balkan telegrams, 280; sees secret telegram from Dardanelles, 286; at War Council (16 Feb 1915), 288; believes success at Dardanelles 'worth taking some risk' for, 293; says Christians at Constantinople will 'have to take their chance', 296; in dispute with Churchill over use of Lemnos, 298-300; emphasizes moral effect of gunfire on Turks, 303; supports Kitchener's view that troops are not needed to force the Dardanelles, 310; receives Churchill's list of conditions for the surrender of Turkey, 315; passes on to Greece Churchill's appeal for naval assistance at Dardanelles, 316; approached by Churchill about Turkish post-war settlement, 320; and the future of Constantinople, 320-1; op-

Grey, Sir Edward—*continued*

poses leaflet warfare, 322; pressed by Churchill about help from Greece, 325-6; pressed by Churchill to encourage Italian participation in the war, 327; asked by Churchill to hasten Russian military co-operation against the Turks, 328; warned by Churchill 'you must be bold and violent', 328-9; Asquith describes (7 March 1915), as 'tired out and hysterical', 330; his views on the post-war territorial settlement, 333-5; on 'possibility of bribery' of Balkan officials, 354; favours establishment of independent Arab States, 355; Churchill favours Balfour as Foreign Secretary during absence of, 361; Churchill protests to, about German ammunition for Turkey being allowed through Rumania, 371-2; and the threat of a German invasion of Holland, 374; receives news of dissension among Young Turks in Constantinople, 395; Churchill advises against responding to Greek offer of assistance (30 April 1915), 412; ill (May 1915), 414; Churchill and Lloyd George alleged (10 June 1915) to be seeking removal of, 454; Churchill seeks support from (19 May 1915), 456; remains Foreign Secretary, 469; ill (end-June 1915), 505; and Churchill's proposed visit to Gallipoli (mid-July 1915), 512, 513; critical of Sir Ian Hamilton, 522; critical of Carson's suggested peace terms with Turkey (19 Aug 1915), 523; opposes conscription (Aug 1915), 527; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; advocates evacuation of Gallipoli Peninsula (11 Oct 1915), 549; in favour of beginning hostilities against Bulgaria (14 Oct 1915), 553; writes to Churchill after his resignation (Nov 1915), 570; Mrs Churchill describes as 'terribly aged and worn-looking' (April 1916), 756; Lloyd George and Churchill critical of Balkan diplomacy of (Sept 1916), 797; allows Churchill to use the

Grey, Sir Edward—*continued*

Foreign Office printer for his Dardanelles evidence (Sept 1916), 806; Churchill critical of his evidence to the Dardanelles Commission (Oct 1916), 814

Grey, Spenser Douglas Adair: commands aircraft squadron in France, 67; leads bombing raid to Cologne (22 Sept 1914), 89; leads second raid (9 Oct 1914), 123-4, 136; and the possibility of Churchill commanding the forces in East Africa (Nov 1915), 565-6

Grigg, Edward William Macleay: Churchill in dugout with (21-22 Nov 1915), 579-80; Churchill lunching with (26 Nov 1915), 584; Churchill in front line with (28-30 Nov 1915), 588-9; Churchill spends evening with (12 Dec 1915), 607; Churchill writes to (6 Jan 1916), 680

Grigg, Mrs (Elizabeth Deas Thomson): 588

Grosvenor, Lord Hugh William: killed in action, 228

Guépratte, Emile-Paul-Aimable: the senior French officer at the Dardanelles, 351-3

Guest, Frederick Edward: sends Churchill account of battle of Marne, 71; tells Churchill of Ypres battle, 160; acts as link between Churchill and Sir J. French, 161-2, 167; Churchill tells of his desire for an army command, 180; dines at Admiralty House, 238; Churchill consults with Kitchener about his going to Dardanelles, 290; one of Sir J. French's emissaries in London (May 1915), 430; urges Churchill to leave the Government (July, Oct 1915), 551-2

Guildhall (London): Asquith, Bonar Law and Churchill speak at (4 Sept 1914), 62-3

Gulflight (American steamship): torpedoed (1 May 1915), 463*n*

Gwynn, Stephen Lucius: on Dardanelles Commission, 789

Gwynne, Howell Arthur: sends Churchill plan to destroy Zeppelins, 33; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 125-7; his criticisms rejected by other newspapers, 128; Press Bureau unwilling to censor his criticisms, 129; Asquith describes as a 'lunatic', 144; British loan to Turkey explained to, 191; advises Asquith (22 April 1915) to remove Churchill from Admiralty, 398-9; informed by Callwell of the May crisis (22 May 1915), 458-9; informed by Callwell of the conscription crisis (July 1915), 527-8; informed by Callwell why Asquith decided not to publish the Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 785; believes he has uncovered an intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Oct 1916), 811

Hadji-Mischef, Pantcho: Grey protests to, 372

Haifa (Turkey): Churchill suggests as point of attack, 220; Fisher suggests feint at, 234; Hankey critical that there was no feint at during Dardanelles attack, 345; Richmond wants landing of 80,000 British troops at, to replace Gallipoli landings, 389; Fisher intends to transport Hamilton's army from Gallipoli to, 452; MAPS, 235, 838

Haig, Sir Douglas: Churchill suggests as Chief of the Imperial General Staff (Oct 1915), 544; succeeds Sir John French as commander of the British Expeditionary Force (Dec 1915), 612-26, 618, 619; agrees to let Sir Archibald Sinclair join Churchill's battalion Staff (Jan 1916), 629; Churchill meets, on the road to St Omer (19 Jan 1916), 643; his HQ twenty-eight miles from the front line, 650; has no plans to give Churchill command of a Brigade (Feb 1916), 668; and F. E. Smith's arrest while visiting Churchill on the western front (Jan 1916), 696-7; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 729; does not

Haig, Sir Douglas—*continued*

object to Churchill taking up his Parliamentary duties again (April 1916), 757, 759; and Churchill's criticisms of the Somme offensive, 792; alleged intrigue against (Oct 1916), 811-12

Hakewill Smith, Edmund: recalls widespread 'horror' at Churchill's impending command of the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers, 629; and conditions in Ypres Salient (Nov 1915), 631; and Churchill's first day in command, 632; and Churchill's bomb-throwing, 634; and Churchill's excursions into no-man's-land, 658; and Churchill's painting efforts while on the western front, 658-9; and Churchill's advocacy of a 'trench digger', 672; and various incidents of F. E. Smith's visit to Churchill on the western front (29-30 Jan 1916), 694-7; and Haig's advice to Churchill about returning to Parliament (April 1916), 759

Haking, Richard Cyril Byrne: summons Churchill from the front line (26 Nov 1915), 584-5; Churchill might serve under, 606

Haldane, 1st Viscount (Richard Burdon Haldane): at 10 Downing Street (1 Aug 1914), 25; and military mobilization, 26; sends Churchill congratulations on Heligoland Bight action, 59; enthusiastic about Churchill's military predictions, 64; praises Churchill on return from Antwerp, 121; urges Churchill not to resign from Admiralty, 133; Asquith describes as 'fussy & jumpy' in Cabinet (23 Oct 1914), 139; at War Council (7 Jan 1915), 242; congratulates Churchill on Dogger Bank action, 261-2; at War Council (28 Jan 1915), 272; belief (28 Feb 1907) that Gallipoli landing would be 'highly dangerous', 294; at War Council (24 Feb 1915), 301; approves giving Russia a privileged position at the Dardanelles in any post-war settlement, 321; reports to Churchill on

Haldane, 1st Viscount—*continued*

Asquith's praise of his 'untiring energy', 330; favours post-war restrictions of armaments, 334; warns War Council (19 March 1915) against a punitive peace, 355; at War Council (14 May 1915), 433; at Violet Asquith's wedding (30 Nov 1915), 595; Garvin believes would join a Lloyd George-Churchill-Carson-Fisher alliance (Dec 1915), 622; intervenes with Churchill to prevent sacking of George Lambert, 775*n*; approves Churchill's *Sunday Pictorial* article on the coming of war (July 1916), 790

Hall, William Reginald: takes Churchill and Fisher message about Turkish ammunition deficiencies (19 March 1915), 357-8; tells Churchill and Fisher about course of secret negotiations with Turkey, 358-9; passes on to Lord Reading a message from Sir Frederick Hamilton that both Fisher and Churchill should leave Admiralty (17 May 1915), 457, 458

Hamilton, Sir Frederick Tower: 47, 84; not on Admiralty War Group, 185; expresses doubts about the Dardanelles, 388; and the crisis of May 1915, 441-2, 444, 448, 449; Fisher proposes dismissal of, from Admiralty Board, 453; believes that both Fisher and Churchill should leave the Admiralty (17 May 1915), 457; a pioneer of the use of shields by infantrymen, 591*n*

Hamilton, Sir Ian Standish Monteith: praises Churchill's military forecast of 1911, 64; appointed to command Mediterranean Expeditionary Force, 325; Churchill seeks to hasten departure of, to Dardanelles, 338-9; Churchill wants him to attack Turks on arrival, 340; leaves London, 341-2, 343; on way to Dardanelles, 346-7; watches naval battle at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 352-4; War Office cannot help in devising plan to land on Gallipoli Peninsula, 355; re-

Hamilton, Sir Ian—*continued*

ports (19 March 1915) on need for a 'deliberate and progressive military operation' at Dardanelles, 357; wishes to move troops from Mudros to Egypt (20 March 1915), 360; wishes to delay naval attack until arrival of 29th Division, 263, 264; considers de Robeck 'a very sound pusher', 371; encourages de Robeck (30 March 1915) to renew the naval attack, 372; defends himself against accusation that he had persuaded de Robeck not to renew the naval attack, 373; unwilling to send small parties of men ashore to cover naval action at the Narrows, 376; de Robeck waits for return of, from Egypt (end-March 1915), 377; Fisher wonders whether he has sufficient troops to take Gallipoli Peninsula, 379; and preparations for a combined attack, 382-3; returns to Lemnos from Egypt, 392; decides (10 April 1915) on points of attack at Gallipoli Peninsula, 393; completes (20 April 1915) plans for Gallipoli landing five days later, 397; asks Rupert Brooke to join his Staff, 401; rejects Birdwood's request to withdraw from Anzac position on first day of Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 407; Churchill's concern (26 April 1915) for the reinforcement of, 409-10; believes he can reach his objectives when attack is renewed, 411, 413; launches new offensive at Helles (6 May 1915), 414; telegraphs to Kitchener 'the result has been failure' (9 May 1915), 415; to be asked what force he needs 'to ensure success', 433; Churchill sends telegram of encouragement to (11 May 1915), 437; opposes use of gas on Gallipoli Peninsula, 470n; his army to be reinforced (7 June 1915), 494; opposes landing at Bulair, 495; sends Churchill account of Gallipoli prospects (18 June 1915), 499-500; informed by Churchill that he is to receive reinforcements (7 July 1915),

Hamilton, Sir Ian—*continued*

508-9; and Churchill's proposed visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 510; Churchill seeks to encourage to ask for more ammunition, 515; and the renewed attack on the Gallipoli Peninsula (6-10 Aug 1915), 516-17, 518-22; and further attacks (21-28 Aug 1915), 524; reinforcements to (Aug 1915), 525, 526, 546; his recall from Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 553-4; and the Government's promised publication of Gallipoli documents (June 1916), 779-81, 783
 Hamilton, Duchess of (Nina Mary Benita Poore): and Fisher's preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 803
 Hammersley, Frederick: 'apathetic', 520; to be replaced, 522
Hampshire (British cruiser): tracking down *Emden* in Bay of Bengal (Sept 1914), 139; sinks, with Kitchener on board (June 1915), 780
 Hanbury-Williams, Sir John: reports Turkish troops threatening Russia in Caucasus (30 Dec 1914), 231-2
 Hankey, Maurice Pascal Alers: opens 'War Book' (29 July 1914), 11; describes popular lack of enthusiasm for war, 23; and defence of Antwerp, 124; at War Council (25 Nov 1914) as Secretary, 176, 220; at War Council (1 Dec 1914), 180-1; suggests British military action elsewhere than on western front, 229-31, 234, 237; at War Council (7 Jan 1915), 242; explains to War Council importance of victory at Dardanelles (8 Jan 1915), 244; at War Council (13 Jan 1915), 252; Fisher pours out criticisms of Churchill to (19 Jan 1915), 259; Fisher passes protest to Asquith through, 268; at War Council (18 Jan 1915), 271; tells Asquith Dardanelles attack needs support of 'a fairly strong military force' (13 Feb 1915), 286; approves Richmond's appeal for use of army at Dardanelles (14 Feb 1915), 287; com-

Hankey, Maurice Pascal Alers—*continued*
 pares conditions for attack on Gallipoli of 1907 with new conditions of 1915, 294–5; wants troop action concentrated at Dardanelles, 301; at War Council supports Churchill's plea for use of troops at the Dardanelles (26 Feb 1915), 309; on impact of Dardanelles bombardments on the Near East (1 March 1915), 316; his memorandum 'After the Dardanelles. The Next Step' (1 March 1915), 318–19; records Lloyd George's criticisms of Grey's Balkan diplomacy, 328; sceptical (9 March 1915) of naval success at Dardanelles without 'a biggish army' at hand, 331; reports Churchill's keenness that Sir Ian Hamilton should attack Turks as soon as he reaches the Dardanelles, 340; and the problem of minesweeping at the Dardanelles, 345; highly critical of conduct of operations at the Dardanelles (15 March 1915); recalls (1 Sept 1916) economic arguments in favour of an attack at the Dardanelles in March 1915, 349–50; finds Churchill 'very depressed' about Dardanelles, 377; suggests measures needed to challenge a possible German invasion of Holland, 377–8; recalls (Aug 1916) positive effects of the naval attack of 18 March 1915, 379–80; warns (6 April 1915) of difficulty of landing troops on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 386; reported 'very anxious about the Dardanelles' (7 April 1915), 387–8; seeks to create effective opposition against the Dardanelles, 389; secretary to Committee to examine British territorial needs in Turkey, 391; reports (19 April 1915) that Churchill 'extremely optimistic' about Dardanelles, 396; learns that Fisher (20 April) is 'more depressed than ever' about Dardanelles, 397; and the Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 411; helps Fisher to draw up reasons against a renewed naval attack at the Dardanelles (11 May

Hankey, Maurice Pascal Alers—*continued*
 1915), 419–20; advises Fisher on need 'to bring Churchill to his bearings' (12 May 1915), 421; encourages Fisher to protest to Asquith (13 May 1915), 426; Fisher protests about Churchill to (14 May 1915), 429; at War Council (14 May 1915), 431; angered by the 'bickering & intrigue' between Fisher and Churchill, 434; believes 'Lord Fisher madder than ever' (19 May 1915), 453, 805; on Churchill's offer to Fisher of 'any terms he liked' (19 May 1915), 456; reports (20 May 1915) 'a consensus of opinion' that both Churchill and Fisher should leave the Admiralty, 457; believes Masterton-Smith 'still hankers after Churchill' (21 May 1915), 468; Churchill writes (2 June 1915) about the 'lost opportunities of the war' to, 488; not present at first meeting of Dardanelles Committee (7 June 1915), 494; chosen by Kitchener to accompany Churchill to Gallipoli, 512; goes to Dardanelles by himself, 515; at Suvla Bay (8 Aug 1915), 518, 521; reports (30 Aug 1915) on hopes for success at Anzac, 525; and the origin of the tank, 535, 810; Churchill wants as Secretary to a special committee to decide future of Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 547; and the ministerial attacks on Kitchener (Oct 1915), 556–7; suggests sending Churchill on mission to Russia (22 Oct 1915), 560; reports Cabinet unanimous that Kitchener should leave War Office (1 Nov 1915), 562; and speculation on Churchill's future career (Nov 1915), 563; and effect of Churchill's departure from the Cabinet, 581, 605; Fisher writes to about anti-Asquith feeling (Jan 1916), 699–701, 704; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 729, 731, 734; and the proposed publication of Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 778, 783–4; and Churchill's criticisms (Aug 1916)

- Hankey, Maurice Pascal Alers—*continued*
of the Somme offensive, 792; and Churchill's evidence to the Dardanelles Commission, 802, 814
- Harcourt, Lewis: wants to annex German East Africa as a centre for Indian emigrants, 333; wants acquisition of Turkish port of Marmarice, 334; suggests giving the Holy Places of Palestine as a mandate to the United States, 373; believes Fisher 'has triumphed' (18 May 1915), 452; Emmott implores Asquith not to replace as Colonial Secretary by Churchill, 460; seeks Duchy of Lancaster patronage, 484; hopes Churchill will not resign (Nov 1915), 560; a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683
- Hardinge of Penshurst, 1st Baron (Charles Hardinge): complains that Royal Navy is not doing enough to track down the *Emden*, 139; orders action against Turkey at head of Persian Gulf, 221; his successor as Viceroy of India discussed, 245-6; hopeful about attack on Dardanelles, 324; informed of territorial plans for the partition of Turkey, 334; on advantage to India of a British victory at the Dardanelles, 349
- 'Harlot of Europe', the: Churchill describes Italy as, 426*n*
- Harmsworth, Harold Alfred Vyvian St George: died of wounds received in action in France (12 Feb 1918), 814*n*
- Harmsworth, Leicester: votes against the Government in the Nigeria debate (Nov 1916), 815*n*
- Harmsworth, Vere Sidney: killed in action in France (13 Nov 1916), 814*n*
- Harper, (?)William: in armoured car skirmish near Cassel, 69
- Hawke* (British cruiser): torpedoed (15 Oct 1914), 184
- Hawtrey, Ralph George: recalls a pre-1914 conversation between Churchill and Lloyd George, 475
- Hay, Ian, *see* Beith, John Hay
- Hazebrouck (France): 339; Churchill attends lectures at, 641, 642; Churchill entertains his officers at, 647; Churchill meets Lloyd George and Bonar Law at, 696-7; MAP, 631
- Hearn, Gordon Risley: discusses trenchworks with Churchill, 671
- Heligoland (German island): possible British base, 19, 21; Sir Arthur Wilson plans attacks on, 153; MAP, 19
- Heligoland Bight: Churchill plans means of reporting German movement in (9 Aug 1914), 38; British naval success in, 58, 62, 84, 88; Churchill wants to blockade 'day and night' (21 Dec 1914), 181; Churchill sees blockade of as preliminary to a Baltic offensive (29 Dec 1914), 226
- Henderson, Arthur: becomes President of the Board of Education (May 1915), 470; and the War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (Aug 1915), 527; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 822
- Henderson, Brodie Haldane: defeated in East Hertfordshire by-election (10 March 1916), 733
- Henderson, Wilfred: commands a Brigade of the Royal Naval Division, 51
- Hendon (Middlesex): air base at, 66, 240
- Henley, Sylvia Laura: and the political crisis of May 1915, 479; Churchill first meets E. L. Spiers at home of, 597
- Henri IV* (French battleship): sent to Dardanelles to replace the *Bouvet*, 354
- Hermes* (British seaplane carrier): torpedoed (31 Oct 1914), 159
- Hertslet, Sir Cecil: at Antwerp, 111
- Herzog, Emile Salomon Wilhelm (André Maurois): and Churchill's delousing committee, 640; possibly the 'vy attentive and spruce' officer who foraged for mutton for Churchill, 655
- Hesperian* (British steamship): torpedoed (4 Sept 1915), 463*n*
- Hetherington, Thomas Gerard: and the origin of the tank, 536, 538

- Hill 60 (Gallipoli Peninsula): 524; MAP, 519
- History: Churchill tells Sir John French 'we are on the stage of', 168; Churchill believes that the 'care and vigilance' of British Admirals will be found praiseworthy by, 285; and the Gallipoli landings, 410-508; Churchill on the harsh judgement of, 439, 517; Churchill on Britain's part on the stage of, 534; Churchill believes has no equal in the failures of 1915-16, 604; Sir John French steps 'swiftly' from the stage of, 616; Churchill believes the 'conception' of Gallipoli will be vindicated by, 636; Churchill's reliance upon the judgement of, 826
- Hobhouse, Charles Edward Henry: reports (10 June 1915) on alleged intrigues of the previous month, 454, 477
- Hoe Farm (Hascombe, near Godalming, Surrey): 493-4, 501-3, 512, 647
- Hoffman, Hermann-Arthur: on Swiss opinion following alleged violation of Swiss neutrality by British aviators, 174
- Hogge, James Myles: critical of provisions for Royal Naval Division, 169
- Hogue* (British cruiser): torpedoed (22 Sept 1914), 85; loss of a cause of criticism, 143, 184-5, 532
- Holderness, Sir Thomas William: 391
- Holland, Arthur Edward Aveling (Tom): at Churchill's battalion sports day (16 Jan 1916), 641; lectures on the battle of Loos (17 Jan 1916), 641; Churchill lunches with (23 Jan 1916), 646; dines with Churchill's battalion (23 Jan 1916), 647; visits Churchill's forward trenches (2 Feb 1916), 659; Churchill dines with at Nieppe (10 Feb 1916), 664; tells Clementine Churchill he hopes her husband may soon command a Brigade, 674; calls on Churchill at Soyer Farm (25 Feb 1916), 676
- Holland: independence of, 1; Antwerp dependent upon goodwill of, 96-8; Royal Naval Division internees in, 125, 131, 170; Churchill wants as Holland—*continued*
- allied power, 244, 247, 252; Fisher wants 750,000 men landed in, 258; Churchill asserts Britain's 'proper line of strategy' is action through, 324; Fisher reminds Churchill of his plan for action in, 348; fears of a German invasion of (end-March 1915), 373-5, 377-9, 385; Churchill believes (Dec 1915) Britain should have landed troops in at beginning of war, 600
- Home Rule (for Ireland): a certainty in July 1914, 3; Ulster to be excluded from, 6; Churchill alienates Conservatives by support of, 32; Churchill involved in dispute with Conservatives over (8-14 Sept 1914), 77-80; and Churchill's relations with the Conservatives in the political crisis of May 1915, 476
- Home Rule (for the Jews): proposed in Palestine by Herbert Samuel, 343
- Home Rule (for Poland): Sazonov dismissed by the Tsar for advocating, 280n
- Hood, Horace Lambert Alexander: arranges Austrian Ambassador's departure from England, 45; accompanies Churchill to Dunkirk, 73; accompanies Churchill to Loch Ewe, 82; accompanies Churchill to Antwerp, 105, 107; in charge of naval operations against German-held Belgian coast, 135-6; mentioned, 153
- Hood Battalion (Royal Naval Division): Clementine Churchill intervenes to provide proper medical facilities for, 306
- Hook of Holland: 374
- Hope, Herbert Willes Webley: sifts intercepted German naval messages, 179
- Hopwood, Sir Francis John Stephens: Churchill outlines plans for defence of Antwerp to, 100; given garbled story of Churchill's mission to Antwerp, 119-20; Prince Louis talks of resignation to, at time of Antwerp, 145; Fisher tells of 'd—d fools' surrounding Churchill, 146; not a member of

- Hopwood, Sir Francis—*continued*
Admiralty War Group, 186; advises Fisher to send Asquith his memorandum of dissent about the Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 421; Fisher seeks support of, 434; and the crisis of May 1915, 441; a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683; and Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 708-9
- 'Hornets': Churchill rebuked for describing Royal Naval Air Service pilots as, 765
- Hoskins, Arthur Reginald: Churchill describes as 'a good sort of General', 644
- Hospice, the (Ploegsteert, Belgium): Churchill's battalion headquarters, 648, 650, 652, 655-6, 662, 663, 674-5; F. E. Smith dines at, 694; F. E. Smith arrested at (30-31 Jan 1916), 695; MAP, 649
- Hotel du Commerce (St Omer, France): F. E. Smith kept under arrest at (Jan 1916), 695
- House of Commons: questions about defence preparations avoided in (Aug 1914), 11; Churchill defends his naval policy to (11 Nov 1914), 169-71; criticisms of Freidrichshafen air raid in, 173-4; adjourns (27 Nov 1914), 177; Bonar Law's criticisms of Admiralty use of merchant shipping, 282-4; Churchill warns against too much criticism of naval losses (15 Feb 1915), 285; Churchill's visits to France criticized in (12 May 1915), 424-5; Churchill's speeches in (15 Nov 1915), 566-8, (7 March 1916), 716-22, (8 March 1916), 728, (9 May 1916), 761-2, (17 May 1916), 763-9, (23 May 1916), 770-4, (31 May 1916), 775, (24 July 1916), 793-7, (16 Aug 1916), 799-800, (22 Aug 1916), 801-2
- Houston, Robert Paterson: sends Clementine Churchill a ring, 40
- Howard, Geoffrey William Algernon: 438
- Howe, 4th Earl (Richard George Penn Curzon): commands a battalion in the Royal Naval Division, 49
- Hozier, Lady Blanche (Lady Blanche Ogilvy): 781
- Hozier, Nellie: and Churchill's departure for the trenches (Nov 1915), 571, 583-4; marries Bertram Romilly (Dec 1915), 595; *henceforth see* Romilly, Nellie
- Hozier, William Ogilvy: at the Dardanelles, 548, 686-7
- Hulderman, Bernhard: 5
- Hulke, Frederick Backhouse: critical of the sending of recruits to Antwerp, 126-7
- Humphreys, Henry: at the Dardanelles (Sept 1915), 542
- Hungarian wheat: Lloyd George's plan to cut Germany off from, 243
- Hunter, Sir Charles Roderick: critical of Churchill's imminent command of a Brigade (Dec 1915), 608, 613-14
- Hunter-Weston, Aylmer: Churchill suggests as possible commander of Dardanelles troops, 301
- Hurstmonceux Castle (Sussex): Churchill paints at (Aug 1916), 798-9
- Hurt, Reginald: recalls two encounters with Churchill on the western front, 673-4
- Imbros: Churchill proposes (13 May 1915) anti-submarine indicator nets to link Gallipoli Peninsula with, 428
- Implacable* (British battleship): ordered by Fisher to go to the Dardanelles, 343; on way to Dardanelles, 354, 358; at Gallipoli landings, 404; to leave Dardanelles, 422
- Inchcape, 1st Baron (James Lyle Mackay): Fisher describes a resignation threat to, 155
- Indefatigable* (British battle cruiser): instructed to shadow *Goeben*, 28, 30; to go to Malta, 250; Fisher wants in home waters, 260, 269
- India: transportation of troops from, 9, 37, 206; number of Muslims in, 189*n*; fear of Turkish threat to Muslims of, 195; Government of, lands force at head of Persian Gulf (7 Nov 1914), 221; Fisher wants troops from, to be

India—*continued*

- landed in Turkey, 234; F. E. Smith wants troops from, to be landed in Turkey, 238; action against Turks on Suez Canal by troops from (Feb 1915), 279; probable effect of a British success at the Dardanelles on, 324; Montagu's fear of Churchill becoming Viceroy of, 330; will want some territorial compensation in return for her military efforts, 355; Asquith can find no support for Venetia Stanley's suggestion of sending Churchill as Viceroy to, 362; Kitchener said to want Viceroyalty of, 602; Churchill wants greater use of troops from (May 1916), 772-3, 794
- India Office: Churchill alleges 'apathy and obstruction of' (July 1916), 794
- Indian Ocean: Japan undertakes convoy duties in, 44*n*; German light cruiser *Emden* sinks merchant shipping in, 137
- Indomitable* (British battle cruiser): instructed to shadow *Goeben*, 28, 30; Admiral Kerr told to hoist his flag on, 204; ordered to join Admiral Carden at Dardanelles, 209
- Inflexible* (British battle cruiser): and battle of Falkland Islands, 182-4; to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*; Fisher wants in home waters, 250, 260, 269; a flagship of Rear-Admiral de Robeck, 266; being sent to Malta for alterations, 332; strikes a mine at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 352, 397*n*; disabled, 354; good progress made in repairs to, 360; thirty-three men killed on, 361*n*; Fisher wants, in North Sea in view of reported German threat to Holland, 375, 379; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Inverness (Scotland): Churchill motors to Loch Ewe from (17 Sept 1914), 81
- Invincible* (British battle cruiser): and battle of Falkland Islands, 182-4
- Ireland: and the European crisis of July 1914, 3-4; and the renewed Home Rule crisis (Sept 1914), 77-80; *Audacious* sunk off northern coast of (Oct 1914), 141
- Iron Cross: reported to be offered as reward for Churchill's capture, 120
- Iron Duke* (British battleship): reaches North Sea, 13; Churchill receives pistols from armoury of, 82; Fisher praises senior officers of, 146
- Irresistible* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*; at Dardanelles, 331; disabled in the naval battle (18 March 1915), 352, 397*n*; sinks, 353; most of her crew rescued, 361*n*, 371; Fisher upset by loss of, 379; MAP, 353
- Isaiah: his description of battle, 71
- Islington, 1st Baron (John Poynder Dickson-Poynder): a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683
- Ismid (Turkey): 326
- Italy: and the war crisis (July 1914), 3; remains neutral (Aug 1914), 26, 30, 40, 42; and invasion of Libya (1911), 189; effect of possible territorial gains on neutrality of, 202, 243; Grey fears she might 'come out on the wrong side' (6 Sept 1914), 205; Asquith expects she might soon join Allies (31 Oct 1914), 216, 219; not willing to make a decision before the spring of 1915, 244; Asquith stresses importance of intervention of (27 Dec 1914), 225; Lloyd George suggests military arrangements be made against Turkey with, 229; slow evolution of Britain's alliance with, 252-3, 255, 316, 323, 327; forced to buy wheat from the United States because of Turkish closure of the Straits, 350; Cabinet discuss (23 March 1915) how to obtain immediate intervention of, 366; fears of effect on of a setback at the Dardanelles, 389, 394-5; Churchill in Paris for negotiations with (5-8 May 1915), 414; insists upon a British naval force in the Adriatic, 418; Fisher deprecates alliance with, 426; adherence to the Allies imminent (14 May 1915), 436-7; alliance expected within ten days (16 May 1915), 443

'Jack Johnsons' ('Coal Boxes'): Churchill sees exploding near Soissons, 81; seen by Jack Churchill at Gallipoli, 416

Jackson, Sir Henry Bradwardine: King suggests as possible First Sea Lord, 150; studies effect of bombardment of outer forts of the Dardanelles, 219; discusses with Churchill and Fisher best method of forcing Dardanelles, 220; in favour of systematic bombardment of Dardanelles, 238; member of Admiralty War Group, 250; and planning of naval attack at Dardanelles, 253, 255-7; argues need for a 'strong military force' to assist navy at Dardanelles (15 Feb 1915), 287; favours annexation of Lemnos, 324; his plan for attacking Bosphorus forts being sent to Admiral Carden, 327; urges (11 March 1915) immediate military support for the navy in Dardanelles attack, 336; advises annexation of Alexandretta, 349; supports Fisher's refusal to order de Robeck to make a second naval attack without military assistance, 365-7; on Committee to consider British territorial needs in Turkey, 391; with Churchill in Paris during Anglo-Italian negotiations (5-8 May 1915), 414; favoured by Admiralty officials as possible First Sea Lord, 457, 458; Churchill advises as First Sea Lord (21 May 1915), 466; succeeds Fisher as First Sea Lord, and concurs in submarine reinforcements to Dardanelles, 485; examines merits of western and Gallipoli fronts (Oct 1915), 548*n*; proposes bombardment of Bulgarian port (Oct 1915), 553; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty in place of (March 1916), 724, 726-8

Jade River: Churchill wishes to block German bases at mouth of, 180

Jaffa (Turkey): Churchill proposes French naval command at, 267

Japan: Churchill eager to bring in as an ally, 42-4; naval help sent to Indian Ocean, 139; Churchill and Fisher seek

Japan—*continued*

naval assistance of, against von Spee, 157-8; navy of has effective command of Pacific, 178; Churchill wants naval force sent to Mediterranean by, 202; possibility of transit of Russian troops for Gallipoli Peninsula through, 205; Churchill wants rifles from, to arm 150,000 Russians (Oct 1915), 561

Jeffreys, George Darell: Churchill trains in Grenadier Guards' Battalion of (Nov-Dec 1915), 574-6, 578, 580; offers to make Churchill his second-in-command, 605; and Churchill's impending promotion to command a Brigade, 608; 'austere', 621

Jellicoe, Sir John Rushworth: becomes Commander-in-Chief of the First Fleet, 14, 16, 26, 39; Clementine Churchill's advice on, 15; Churchill informs of fall of Namur, 55-6; Fisher's prediction that he would become Commander-in-Chief in 1914, 64; provides Churchill with pistols, 82; wants to suppress news of sinking of *Audacious*, 141-2; Gwynne urges Asquith to put in Churchill's place as First Lord, 144; 'a splendid man of business', 145; Fisher urges Churchill to trust implicitly, 146; Fisher declares 'shoot the pessimists' to, 154; Kitchener does not interfere with, 166; Asquith describes face of, 176*n*; ordered to send two battle cruisers to South America, 182; learns why it is not wise 'to terrorize Admirals for losing ships', 185; Fisher describes Admiralty War Group to, 186; ships to be used at Dardanelles of no value to, 220, 233; Churchill explains importance of North Sea offensive to (4 Jan 1915), 236 (11 Jan 1915), 247; Fisher protests about Dardanelles to (19 Jan 1915), 259, and (21 Jan 1915), 260; and Dogger Bank action, 261; Churchill declares his fleet unaffected by Dardanelles operation, 264; his protest to Fisher about diversion of ships to

- Jellicoe, Sir John Rushworth—*continued*
Dardanelles, 269; Fisher expresses doubts about Commodore Keyes to, 326; Churchill informs of object of capture of Constantinople, 331; Fisher complains about Dardanelles to (2 April 1915), 382, and again (4 April 1915), 384–5; Fisher informs of Kitchener's belief in success at the Dardanelles, 392; Fisher advises to protest against aeroplanes going to Dardanelles, 397; Churchill praises Fisher's patronage of, 442; instructed to prepare for a decisive naval battle (17 May 1915), 449; Fisher informs (22 May 1915) that 'Balfour is really more to blame than Winston' about Dardanelles, 467; Churchill describes 'separation' from Fisher to, 483–4; and Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty (Feb 1916), 701, 724, 729, 730, 731, 733; Churchill critical of his actions at Jutland (June 1916), 777ⁿ
- Jellicoe, Lady (Florence Gwendoline Cayzer): 385ⁿ
- Jerrold, Douglas: 50ⁿ
- Jerusalem: Lloyd George does not wish to see under French control, 343; MAP, 838
- Joffre, Joseph Jacques Césaire: Sir John French told to co-operate with, 60–1; Sir J. French approves his strategy at battle of Marne, 72; requests British troops for Dunkirk garrison, 73, 74; asked to provide help for defence of Antwerp, 102; Kitchener and Grey hold largely responsible for fall of Antwerp, 124–5; appeals to British for help in defence of Channel Ports (16 Oct 1914), 135; British seek support of, for advance eastwards along Belgian coast, 164; Kitchener asserts German threat to, 304; and the danger of a German invasion of Holland (end-March 1915), 374; Kitchener wants to urge early offensive upon (20 Aug 1915), 523; persuades Kitchener to launch a British offensive on the
- Joffre, Joseph Jacques Césaire—*continued*
western front in Sept 1915, 526–7; asked to take over some of the British line (Oct 1915), 554
- Jowett, Benjamin: quoted, 438
- Joynson-Hicks, William: urges Government to set up an Air Service (May 1916), 763; criticizes Churchill's use of the word 'hornets', 765
- Judas Iscariot: Clementine Churchill sees Lloyd George as direct descendant of, 623
- Julius Caesar* (Shakespeare): quoted, 736
- Jutland, battle of: Churchill describes as 'a tremendous risk', 262; Churchill drafts communiqué after, 777; Churchill criticizes Asquith for making no reference to, 793
- Karachi (British India): troops transported to France from, 37
- Karlsruhe* (German light cruiser): believed in hiding in Caribbean, 264
- Kattégat: Churchill plans sending Fleet through, 52; MAPS, 19, 52
- Kavalla (Greece): Fisher wants to ensure Bulgarian support by encouragement of acquisition of, 338, 382; Churchill proposes as possible British base for attack on Bulgaria, 544; MAPS, 545, 838
- Kaye, Mary Forbes: Hamilton dictates Gallipoli 'diary' to, 779
- Keith-Falconer, Adrian: describes departure of Oxfordshire Hussars for France, 73
- Kellaway, Frederick George: seeks to uncover disagreement between Fisher and Churchill, 413
- Kelly, John Donald: and escape of *Goeben*, 41
- Kelly, William Archibald Howard: Churchill praises audacity of, 41
- Kemal, Mustafa: protests against too pro-German a policy for Turkey (1914), 212; commands Turks on Sari Bair (Aug 1915), 520
- Kemp, Laurence: Signal Officer at Churchill's battalion headquarters,

- Kemp, Laurence—*continued*
 658; wounded (16 Feb 1916), 668; kisses nose-piece of shell that wounded him, 670
- Kemmel (Belgium): Churchill visits Jack Seely near, 592; MAPS, 575, 631, 649
- Kent (British cruiser): off South America, 182
- Kephcz Bay (Dardanelles): minefield, 369, 370, 377, 390; Fisher refuses to allow de Robeck to make an attack on (May 1915), 418–21, 428; Churchill claims new naval vessels capable of passing minefield at (Aug 1915), 525; the sweeping of mines in an ‘incalculable factor’ in the Dardanelles operation, 813; MAP, 353
- Kerr, Mark Edward Frederic: discusses Greek co-operation in Gallipoli landings, 204, 208–9
- Keyes, Roger John Brownlow: commands submarine flotilla, 36; welcomed by Clementine Churchill after Heligoland Bight action, 59; accompanies Churchill to Loch Ewe, 82; frustrated by Navy’s passive rôle, 84; warns Churchill about ‘live-bait squadron’, 85; Fisher critical of, 326, 385; ‘spoiling to have at it again’ at Dardanelles (21 March 1915), 363; recognizes need for delay in renewing the naval attack, 365; believes that Hamilton influenced de Robeck not to renew naval attack, 373; opposed to further delay at Dardanelles (10 April 1915), 392; reported ‘in the best of spirits’ (11 April 1915), 393; goes ashore at Y beach (26 April 1915), 407; supports renewed naval attack on the Narrows (9 May 1915), 417; recalls General Monro’s attitude to the fighting at Gallipoli, 563ⁿ
- Khartoum: destruction of Mahdi’s tomb at (1898), 327ⁿ
- Kiel (Germany): British naval squadron at, 2; MAPS, 19, 53, 842
- Kiel Canal (Germany): Admiralty plan to seize, 20; Churchill plans attack on, 38, 52; Germans safe behind lock-gates of, 140; Churchill resurrects plan to occupy (Dec 1914), 225–6, 246; Churchill wants it removed from German control once the war is over, 334; MAPS, 19, 53
- Kilid Bahr (Gallipoli Peninsula): torpedo tubes at, 218; means of shaking morale of Turkish defenders at, 276; forts damaged at, 328; Kitchener worried about Turkish strength on plateau above, 341; Churchill anticipates need to occupy before ships could force the Narrows, 347; British ships ready to attempt the advance to (18 March 1915), 351; army preparing to attack, 368, 391, 393; hopes of eventual capture of, 429; Churchill wants army to advance to, 487, 494; MAPS, 353, 403
- King’s Royal Rifle Corps: possibility of Churchill commanding a battalion in (Dec 1915), 615
- Kinsky, Charles: one of Churchill’s Austrian friends, 45
- Kitchener, 1st Earl (Horatio Herbert Kitchener): discusses European crisis with Churchill (28 July 1914), 9–10; further discussion with Churchill (29 July 1914), 11–12; lunches at Admiralty (31 July 1914), 21; intercepted at Dover (4 Aug 1914), 28; at Council of War (5 Aug 1914), 33; discussion with Churchill about Expeditionary Force, 34, 35; finds job for Duke of Marlborough, 36; Churchill thought to be edging over into his domain, 50; wants Royal Naval Division as eventual part of one of his new armies, 51; and fall of Namur, 53–5; approves sending Marine Brigade to Ostend, 56; reported not yet in favour of conscription (26 Aug 1914), 57; Clementine Churchill informs of Heligoland Bight action, 58–9; in dispute with Sir John French, 59–62, 162; asks Churchill to be responsible for aerial defence of Britain (3 Sept 1914), 65,

Kitchener, 1st Earl—*continued*

764; Asquith considers 'absolutely no use' in drafting reassuring Press communiqués, 71; decides to send Yeomanry regiment to Dunkirk, 73, 74; asks Churchill to visit Sir John French in France, 80-1; Churchill proposes use of naval guns to, 91; approves Churchill's fourth visit to France (26 Sept 1914), 92; and the defence of Antwerp, 96-8, 101, 103-10, 112-16, 118-19, 121-2, 124, 130, 131, 134; asks Churchill for naval action against German-held Belgian coast (Oct 1914), 135; fears imminent German invasion (Oct 1914), 137-8, 139; favours keeping loss of *Audacious* secret, 142; quarrel with Lloyd George over Welsh troops, 143; Fisher makes demands of, 155; sympathetic to Churchill after naval defeat off Coronel, 158; his quarrel with Sir John French soothed by Churchill (6 Dec 1914), 163; opposes Churchill's proposed sixth wartime visit to France (mid-Dec 1914), 164-7; his relations with Churchill, 168; his rôle at Antwerp explained to Parliament by Asquith, 169; Churchill suggests training of seventeen-year-old soldiers, 171; at War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; Asquith describes face of, 176*n*; opposes taking initiative against Turkey (17 Aug 1914), 195; discusses Turkish situation with Churchill (31 Aug 1914), 202; Callwell reports on possibility of Gallipoli landing to (3 Sept 1914), 203; believes 'Turkey should be punished' (23 Sept 1914), 210-11; and coming of war with Turkey, 219, 221; says no troops can be spared to help Serbia (Dec 1914), 224; circulates report of Russian military weakness (end-Dec 1914), 225; Hankey's proposal for an attack on Turkey circulated to, 229; Russians appeal for demonstration against Turks, 232-3; says troops not available for attack on Turkey, 235, 238;

Kitchener, 1st Earl—*continued*

opposes scheme to advance along Belgian coast (Jan 1915), 241; says he can spare troops for landing on German island of Borkum (Jan 1915), 242; warns of German offensive on western front (8 Jan 1915), 243; Churchill sends Dardanelles plans to (12 Jan 1915), 250; and planning of Dardanelles attack, 256, 257, 260; and capture of Alexandretta, 267-8; and Turkish threat to Egypt, 270; believes naval attack on Dardanelles 'vitally important', 271-2; wants British cavalry sent to Serbia, 273-4; wants Churchill to inform Sir J. French that attack on Zeebrugge is to be abandoned, 275; and Dardanelles operation, 277; Churchill critical of, 278; wants best British troops to go to aid of Serbia, 281; believes British troops at Salonika will weaken Turkish morale at Dardanelles, 282; learns of setback at Dardanelles (10 Feb 1915), 286; agrees (16 Feb 1915) to send 29th Division for action at the Dardanelles, 288; quarrels with Churchill about armoured cars on the western front, 289-91; declares (19 Feb 1915) 29th Division not to go to Dardanelles, 291-3; on far-reaching effects of the occupation of Gallipoli Peninsula, 296; Churchill wants military commitment from (20 Feb 1915), 300; opposes sending 29th Division to Dardanelles (24 Feb 1915), 301-2, 304; asserts Anzac troops good enough for 'a cruise in the Sea of Marmora', 303; reiterates his belief that no troops are needed at Dardanelles (26 Feb 1915), 307-10; his influence and stature, 312-13; halts preparation of troop transports for Dardanelles, 313-14; obtains further delay in sending British troops to the Dardanelles (3 March 1915), 322; Churchill presses for a speedy concentration of troops at the Dardanelles (4 March 1915), 324-5; Churchill describes (1899) his

Kitchener, 1st Earl—*continued*

'wicked act' in destroying the Mahdi's tomb, 327*n*; Asquith's praise of (7 March 1915), 330; tells War Council (10 March 1915) that 29th Division *can* go to the Dardanelles 332; declares that Palestine 'would be of no value' to Britain, 333; wants Germany to pay 'an indemnity' when war is over, 334; and Sir Ian Hamilton's departure for the Dardanelles, 338–41; would rather annex Alexandretta than control Palestine, 344; Churchill appeals to, for immediate assembly of troops at Mudros (14 March 1915), 346–7; memorandum on the strategic advantages of the defeat of Turkey (16 March 1915), 349; Sir Ian Hamilton describes naval attack at Dardanelles to (18 March 1915), 353–4; tells War Council (19 March 1915) that War Office does not have enough information to have a Gallipoli landing, 355; Hamilton reports to (19 March 1915) on need for 'a deliberate and progressive military operation' at the Dardanelles, 357; reported 'not dissatisfied' with course of events at Dardanelles (22 March 1915), 360; supports Churchill's desire for a renewed naval attack at the Dardanelles, 366; willing to hasten return of troops from Egypt to the Gallipoli Peninsula, 368; still hopes for a victory by ships alone at the Dardanelles (end March 1915), 372; makes preparations for land operations on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 373, 377, 381, 386–7; and the threat of a German invasion of Holland, 374; in dispute with Churchill over munitions supplies (6–7 April 1915), 386–7; Churchill appeals to, to allow 15-inch howitzer to go from France to the Dardanelles, 391–2; deprecates (11 April 1915) delaying military attack on Gallipoli Peninsula, 395; Churchill's unsent letter to (26 April 1915) about Gallipoli reinforcements, 409–10; learns of failure of renewed

Kitchener, 1st Earl—*continued*

offensive at Helles (6–9 May 1915), 415; angry at decision to withdraw *Queen Elizabeth* from Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 423; explains importance of Dardanelles expedition to Sir G. Riddell (13 May 1915), 427; orders ammunition to go from France to Gallipoli, 431; fears a 'rising in the Moslem world' if Gallipoli abandoned, 432; Churchill reports to Asquith on 'unreasonable' mood of (14 May 1915), 434; George V believes Sir J. French and Churchill are intriguing to remove, 454; *Daily Mail* demands dismissal of (May 1915), 466; informs Churchill 'all seems cheerful' at Dardanelles (22 May 1915), 467; Churchill's last ministerial visitor at the Admiralty (25 May 1915), 469; remains Secretary of State for War, 469; Churchill presses to send gas helmets and canisters to Dardanelles, 470; Churchill reports 'vy friendly to the Dardanelles' (26 May 1915), 471; and the political crisis of May 1915, 474, 479; and the possibility of a Bulair landing, 495; Churchill presses to send more troops to Dardanelles (15 June 1915), 496–7; clashes with Churchill over Turkish ammunition (21 June 1915), 502; says war with Turkey will end once Gallipoli Peninsula captured, 508; agrees to send reinforcements to Gallipoli (5 July 1915), 508; suggests (mid-July 1915) that Churchill visit the Gallipoli Peninsula, 510; wants Hankey to accompany Churchill to Gallipoli Peninsula, 512–14; refuses to approve Churchill's telegram to Hankey about ammunition for Gallipoli, 515; and the Gallipoli offensives (August 1915), 522, 523, 524, 525, 526; and the Calais Conference (6–7 July 1915), 526–7; and conscription (Aug 1915), 527–9; Lloyd George, Churchill and Curzon critical of (Sept 1915), 531; and the future of the Gallipoli

- Kitchener, 1st Earl—*continued*
 offensive (Sept 1915), 539; Churchill advocates removal of, from War Office (4 Oct 1915), 543; Churchill believes is too busy to study future of Gallipoli (6 Oct 1915); opposes evacuation of Gallipoli (11 Oct 1915), 549; proposes a joint Anglo-Russian attack on Bulgaria (14 Oct 1915), 553; Churchill accuses of neglecting Dardanelles reinforcements, 554; concerted Ministerial attack on (Oct 1915), 556–60, 562; leaves London on Cabinet mission to Dardanelles (Nov 1915), 563; Lady Randolph sends Churchill news of (21 Nov 1915), 582; his precipitate return to London (30 Nov 1915), 589, 595, 601–3, 605; Churchill believes the hour of his exposure 'draws nearer', 608; Churchill sees himself as having to 'procure the dismissal' of, 611; argues against sending troops from Salonika to Dardanelles (Dec 1915), 617; 'purblind', 686; 'overlays the War Office', 691; Churchill seeks release from military duties from (March 1916), 730; Fisher wants Churchill to attack War Office administration of (March 1916), 732, 734; Mrs Churchill describes as 'thinner and sadder' (April 1916), 756; and the proposed publication of Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 779; drowned at sea (5 June 1916), 780; 'he was not going to answer', 780–1; 'the glory had departed', 783; Asquith acts as Secretary of State for War in succession to (6 June–7 July 1916), 793; his rôle at the time of the Dardanelles the subject of a bitter dispute (Nov 1916), 817–19
- Knox, Alfred William Fortescue: reports to War Office about Russian military situation, 224–5
- Königen Luise* (German minelayer): sunk, 38
- Königsberg* (German light cruiser): tracked down, 184*n*
- Krithia (Gallipoli Peninsula): allied forces fail to capture, 415; MAPS, 403, 519
- Kroell, T: 441
- Kronprinz Wilhelm* (German armoured cruiser): believed to be at large, 264
- Kuchuk Chekmeje (Turkey): 249, 326; MAP, 841
- Kühlmann, Richard von: his rumoured appointment as German Minister to Holland, 378
- Kuleli-Burgas (Turkey): 249; Churchill suggests British military action against (Oct 1915), 544; MAPS, 545, 840
- Kungsbacka fiord (Sweden): possible British base, 19, 21; MAP, 19
- Kurna (Turkey): Turkish garrison surrenders (7 Dec 1914), 222; MAP, 839
- Kut-el-Amara (Turkey): British victory at (Sept 1915), 590
- Labour Party: and Conservative policy towards Ireland, 78
- La Crèche (France): Churchill's battalion billeted in (24–26 Jan 1916), 647; MAP, 631
- Laeso Channel (Denmark): possible British base, 19, 21; MAP, 19
- La Fère-en-Tardenois (France): Sir John French's HQ visited by Churchill (16 Sept 1914), 80; MAP, 54
- La Gorgue (France): 573, 574, 588; MAP, 575
- Lambert, Cecil Foley: not on Admiralty War Group, 184–5; discusses possibility of Gallipoli landings with War Office representatives (1 Sept 1914), 203; expresses doubts about the Dardanelles, 388; opposes Fisher's resignation (16 May 1915), 444; Fisher proposes dismissal of from Admiralty Board (19 May 1915), 453
- Lambert, George: not on Admiralty War Group, 186; brings Churchill's message of 'any terms he liked' to Fisher (19 May 1915), 456; and Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty (Jan–March 1916), 699–701, 704, 714, 723; offers to support

Lambert, George—*continued*

Churchill in the House of Commons (May 1916), 774-5

Land Ship Committee (of the Admiralty): and the origin of the tank, 536-7

Lansdowne, 5th Marquess of (Lord Henry Charles Keith Petty-Fitzmaurice): his second son killed in action, 228; present at War Council (10 March 1915), 332-5; becomes Minister without Portfolio (May 1915), 470; at Dardanelles Committee (12 June 1915), 494; agrees on need to send reinforcements to Dardanelles (5 July 1915), 508; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; favours conscription (Oct 1915), 556; Churchill encourages not to resign from Cabinet (Nov 1915), 587; opposes Gallipoli evacuation, 601, 617; and the renewed conscription crisis (April 1916), 750

La Panne (Belgium): 599; MAP, 575

Lapeyrère, A. E. H. G. M. Boué de: 18 Larken, Frank: and British action at Alexandretta (18-22 Dec 1914), 222, 233*n*; his report circulated to the Cabinet (8 Feb 1915), 279

Larmor, Sir Joseph: learns Bonar Law's hostile opinion of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 132

Latakia (Turkey): Churchill proposes French naval command at, 267

Laurence Farm (east of Ploegsteert, Belgium): Churchill's advanced battalion headquarters (27 Jan-2 May 1916), 652-4, 657-60, 665-73, 676-8, 692, 693, 702, 741, 754, 756, 759; MAP, 649

Laventie (France): Churchill in the front line near (Nov-Dec 1915), 577, 606, 608; MAP, 575

Lavery, Lady (Hazel Martyn): and Churchill's early painting experiments, 503, 582

Lavery, Sir John: 503, 582

Law, Andrew Bonar: approached about possible Coalition on eve of war, 12-

Law, Andrew Bonar—*continued*

13, 22; at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; seeks place for nephews in Royal Naval Division, 48; speaks at Guildhall, 62; praises Churchill's remarks at Guildhall, 63; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 132, 169; critical of Admiralty's use of merchant shipping, 282-4; present at War Council (10 March 1915), 332-5; Asquith describes as 'of fifth rate quality' (21 March 1915), 361; Sir J. French puts his grievances to (May 1915), 430; and the crisis of 15-17 May 1915, 444-7; Churchill's first appeal to (19 May 1915), 455-6; Churchill's second appeal to (20 May 1915), 461-3; unable to support Churchill's desire to remain at the Admiralty, 464-5; becomes Colonial Secretary, 470; and Conservative suspicions of Churchill in May 1915, 476; Churchill proposes Bulair landing to, 494; Churchill sees as a potential ally, 495; seeks Duchy of Lancaster patronage, 504; opposes Churchill's proposed visit to the Gallipoli Peninsula (mid-July 1915), 513; critical of Sir Ian Hamilton, 522; believes further attacks at Gallipoli will be 'a useless sacrifice' (19 Aug 1915), 523; agrees (Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; pessimistic about the future at Gallipoli (Sept 1915), 539; wants act of war against Bulgaria (Oct 1915), 553; believes Gallipoli positions 'untenable' (5 Nov 1915), 563; member of the Cabinet War Committee (Nov 1915), 563; favours Churchill as commander of the British Forces in East Africa (Nov 1915), 565; speaks sympathetically after Churchill's resignation speech (15 Nov 1915), 568-9; Lady Randolph Churchill invites to dine, 582; Lady Randolph Churchill plans to dine with again, 594; demands immediate Gallipoli evacuation (Nov 1915), 601; his star 'much in the ascendant' (Dec 1915), 617; Churchill

Law, Andrew Bonar—*continued*

refers to, as a possible Prime Minister in succession to Asquith (Dec 1915), 622; Churchill urges his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 688; his 'growing prestige' (Jan 1916), 689, 691, 692; and the arrest of F. E. Smith while visiting Churchill on the western front (Jan 1916), 695-7; and Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty (Jan-Feb 1916), 700-1, 725; Churchill continues to urge his wife to keep in touch with (April 1916), 750; Churchill believes Bonar Law has 'his supreme chance now' (April 1916), 751; opposes Churchill in the House of Commons (17 May 1916), 768, 769-70; his sneers echoed by a lesser man, 774; announces Government intention to publish Dardanelles documents (1 June 1916), 778, 786; Churchill protests to Aitken about 'personal' criticisms of (Aug 1916), 800; Carson's Unionist War Committee critical of, 815; and the fall of Asquith (Oct-Dec 1916), 816-17, 819-23

League of Retired Officers' Cats: Clementine Churchill fears the formation of, 15

Le Havre (France): Sir John French urges defence of, 54-5; British aviators cross to, on way to Belfort, 172; MAP, 54

Leipzig (German light cruiser): 156-7

Le Matin: and the Marconi affair (1912), 623*n*

Lemnos: wanted as British base for Dardanelles operations, 281; War Council agrees to send 29th Division to, 288; dispute between Churchill and Grey over use of, 298-300; British troops being assembled at, 304; War Office do not want French division at, 314; Fisher wants Britain to annex, after the war, 322; Sir Henry Jackson favours annexation of, 324; Churchill tires to hasten Sir Ian Hamilton's departure for, 338, 342; Hamilton leaves Egypt for, 392; Commander Samson's armoured cars reach, 396; MAPS, 838, 840

Leslie, Leonie Blanche: one of her sons killed in action, 140

Leslie, Norman Jerome Beauchamp: killed in action, 140-1, 228

Leveson, Arthur Cavenagh: and British plans against Germany, 20

Liberal Party: and the coming of war, 9, 20, 23; and Home Rule, 77; and criticisms of Antwerp expedition, 169-70; rumours circulate in, of Churchill's intrigue with Repington to publicize the shell shortage of May 1915, 460; doubts about Churchill's loyalty and judgement in, 477-8; and the growing pressure for conscription (June 1915), 492

Liberal War Committee: 735, 746

Libya: Italian invasion of (1911), 189

Lice: Churchill's discourse on, 639; the attempt to eliminate, 640

Liège (Belgium): importance of German capture of, to British military thinking about Dardanelles, 295

Lierre (Belgium): Churchill motors to Marine HQ at, 115; Rawlinson joins Churchill on road to, 118; MAP, 99

Life of Lord Kitchener (Sir George Arthur): 817*n*

Lille (France): German armoured cars reported near, 68; Marine Brigade units at, 73; Marine Brigade moves to, 92, 93; French army decides to launch offensive in region of, 105; MAPS, 75, 99, 575, 649

Limpus, Arthur Henry: trains Turkish navy (1912-14), 188, 190; puts to sea (July 1914) to escort *Sultan Osman I* through Dardanelles, 191; on German influence at Constantinople (Aug 1914), 198, 206; Churchill brings mission of, to an end, 207; Churchill accepts Grey's veto on appointment of, to command at Dardanelles, 209; on Turkish naval officer's fears, 212; and installation of torpedo tubes at Kilid Bahr, 218; advises annexation of Lemnos (19 Feb 1915), 300*n*; writes to Churchill (7 June 1915) 'you are yet young & will be needed again', 482

Limoges (France): 648*n*

Lipsett, Louis James: and trench 'raids', 636-7; advises Churchill against precipitant return to London (March 1916), 745-6

Listening for the Drums (Sir Ian Hamilton): quoted, on Kitchener's death, 780-1

Littlejohns, Astle Scott: with armoured train at Antwerp, 100, 109

Liverpool: Churchill's speech at (21 Sept 1914), 84, 86

Llewellyn Smith, Sir Hubert: 391

Lloyd George, David: and the European crisis (July 1914), 3, 12; reports Bank of England attitude to the war, 23; Churchill seeks to influence (1 Aug 1914), 23-4; supports need for British intervention (3 Aug 1914), 27; recalls Churchill's mood on outbreak of war, 31; at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; Clementine Churchill uses Blenheim Palace notepaper in writing to, 36; Churchill seeks reassurance from, 55; his views on conscription reported (26 Aug 1914), 57; present at emergency meeting of Ministers (31 Aug 1914), 60; mentioned, 94-5; praises Churchill on return from Antwerp, 121; criticisms of Churchill's actions at Antwerp sent to, 127; speaks critically to Frances Stevenson of Churchill's actions at Antwerp 132; opposes keeping loss of *Audacious* secret, 142; quarrel with Kitchener over Welsh troops, 143; reports Churchill's desire for 'a flashy success', 159; attends War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; wishes to unite Balkan states against Austria, 200; supports Buxton mission to Balkans, 201; believes bombardment of Dardanelles forts (3 Nov 1914) alerted Turks, 218; searches for alternate war zone to western front (1 Jan 1915), 228-9; Hankey's proposal for an attack on Turkey circulated to, 229; opposes further attacks on western front (Jan 1915), 241; appeals at War Council for attack on Austria (8 Jan 1915), 243; against Zeebrugge

Lloyd George, David—*continued*

attack, 251; 'liked idea' of attack on Dardanelles, 252; wants British force to join Bulgars in attack on Adrianople, 273; believes help to Serbia a paramount British interest, 274, 277; at War Council (16 Feb 1915), 288; tells War Council (19 Feb 1915) troops should be sent to the east, 293; wants British troops in Mesopotamia to go to Dardanelles, 301; asks about Army's rôle if Navy fails at the Dardanelles, 302; Churchill urges need for 115,000 troops at Dardanelles on, 306; appeals at War Council for despatch of 100,000 men to the east 'following close on the fall of the Dardanelles' (26 Feb 1915), 309; Churchill believes has 'more true insight & courage than anyone else' (26 Feb 1915), 311; opposed to Churchill's suggestion of hiring the Turks as mercenaries after the Turkish surrender, 323; wants Grey to take a Balkan initiative, 328; said to favour the imprisonment of men who would not engage in wartime work, 330; on Russian keenness for Constantinople, 332; prepared to give Alexandretta to France to avoid a quarrel, 333; favours Home Rule for the Jews in a British-controlled Palestine, 343; his hopes for an allied Balkan Federation, 349; at the War Council (19 March 1915), 354; opposes a punitive peace which would prevent Germany acting as a counterweight to Russia, 356; rebuts stories of an intrigue against Asquith, 361-2; Margot Asquith warns of Balfour's hostility, 372; quarrels with Churchill (5 April 1915), 383-4; Sir J. French puts his grievances to (May 1915), 430; sceptical (14 May 1915) of outcome of Gallipoli campaign, 432, 433; and Fisher's resignation (15 May 1915), 438-9, 443; his harsh words about Churchill and the war reported by Frances Stevenson (15 May 1915), 440; Bonar Law visits

Lloyd George, David—*continued*

at the Treasury (17 May 1915), 445; argues in favour of a Coalition (17 May 1915), 446, 447; suggests (17 May 1915) Churchill as Colonial Secretary, 448; Churchill does not believe suitable as Secretary of State for War (17 May 1915) 449; reports to Frances Stevenson Asquith's cynical observations about Churchill (18 May 1915), 451; alleged (10 June 1915) by Charles Hobhouse to be part of a plot to remove Kitchener and Grey, 454; Churchill seeks support from (18 May 1915) 456; his four-month opposition to Churchill's naval estimates (1913-14), 462; becomes Minister of Munitions, 470; and the political crisis of May 1915, 475-6; Churchill describes political activities of (12 June 1915), 495; wants Bulgaria as an ally (end June 1915), 505-6; urges need to send sufficient ammunition to Dardanelles (5 July 1915), 508; wants the French to send men and munitions to Dardanelles (Aug 1915), 526; examined by War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (16 Aug 1915), 527, 529; discusses conduct of war with Churchill (14 Sept 1915), 530-1; raises questions of withdrawing from Gallipoli (23 Sept 1915), 538-9; agrees (24 Sept 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; believed by Churchill to have 'forced on a coalition' in May 1915, 541; Churchill proposes as Secretary of State for War (4 Oct 1915), 543-4; and the possibility of Bulgaria as an ally, 544-5; Churchill wants decision about future of Gallipoli to be suggested by (Oct 1915), 547; pleads for British military help for Serbia (11 Oct 1915), 549-50; reported 'sick with Churchill' (11 Oct 1915), 551; opposes any further attack at Gallipoli (14 Oct 1915), 554; highly critical of Kitchener, 556-8; 'fatal' to make him Secretary of State for War (Nov 1915), 560; a member of the Cabinet War

Lloyd George, David—*continued*

Committee (Nov 1915), 563; writes to Churchill after his resignation (Nov 1915), 570; seems to Churchill like a mandarin 'of some remote province of China' (Nov 1915), 587; demands Gallipoli evacuation (Nov 1915), 601; Churchill foresees 'a system à la L.G.' (8 Dec 1915), 605; Garvin describes political position of (20 Dec 1915), 618; Churchill talks to, in London (end-Dec 1915), 621; Garvin wants alliance between Churchill, Fisher, Carson and, 622; Mrs Churchill describes as 'the direct descendant of Judas Iscariot', 623; Churchill believes 'we can work together if occasion arises', 627; and the conscription crisis (Dec 1915), 679; Churchill and his wife disagree over (Jan 1916), 680, 681, 682-3, 691, 698; his political position (Jan 1916), 685, 689; Mrs Churchill lunches with (24 Jan 1916), 690-1; to visit Churchill in France, 692, 693, 694; present after the arrest of F. E. Smith on the western front (31 Jan 1916), 695-7; opens Mrs Churchill's Ponders End canteen (3 Feb 1916), 698-9; Fisher compares Churchill's 'courage' with, 701; his growing discontent with Asquith's leadership (Jan-Feb 1916), 703-5; 722, 723; his attitude to Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 725; Churchill urges both his wife and F. E. Smith to keep in touch with (April 1916), 750-1; Churchill writes 'the moment for you to act has come' (10 April 1916), 752; Churchill urges C. P. Scott to see (10 April 1916), 753; critical of Asquith and Balfour (13 April 1916), 755; C. P. Scott sees as a leader of 'a real opposition' to Asquith (16 April 1916), 756-7; has no need of Churchill's support (April 1916), 759, 761; succeeds Kitchener at the War Office (July 1916), 781, 785, 793; Churchill hopes to succeed at

Lloyd George, David—*continued*

Ministry of Munitions, 782–3; proposes secret committee of House of Commons to inquire into Dardanelles operation, 786–7; believed to be behind criticisms of the Somme offensive, 792; Churchill addresses his criticisms of the War Office to (24 July 1916), 794–8; Churchill gets help from in preparing evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 805; and the 'tank' 809–11; alleged to be part of an intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Oct 1916), 811; and the fall of Asquith (Oct–Dec 1916), 816, 817, 819–21; becomes Prime Minister (6 Dec 1916), 822; his changing attitude towards Churchill, 825

Loch Ewe (Scotland): Churchill visits Grand Fleet at (17 Sept 1914), 81–2

Locker-Lampson, Oliver Stillingfleet: 531

London: Churchill responsible for aerial defence of, 66; Fisher fears 'terrible massacre' in, 239; Churchill outlines air defence plans for (7 Jan 1915), 240

London (British battleship): ordered by Fisher to the Dardanelles (19 March 1915), 354, 358; to leave Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 422

London Support Farm (Ploegsteert, Belgium): 27th Brigade headquarters, 650; Churchill temporarily in command at, 661–2; MAP, 649

London Opera House: Churchill speaks at (11 Sept 1914), 75–7, 80

Long, Walter Hume: writes encouragingly to Churchill (Aug 1914), 32; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127, 180; Churchill sends defence of his naval policy to, 159; becomes President of the Local Government Board (May 1915), 470; and Churchill's Irish policies, 476; favours conscription (Oct 1915), 556; Churchill criticizes his support for the Special Register Bill (Aug 1916), 799; Colonial Secretary (Dec 1916), 822; vetoes Churchill's inclusion in Lloyd George's Cabinet (7 Dec 1916), 823

Loos (France), battle of (September 1915): 539; Churchill compares losses at with Dardanelles, 540–1; heavy losses of the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers at, 628, 631, 633, 637; Churchill attends lecture on, 641; the line at Ploegsteert compared with, 648, 652; Churchill learns more of, from General Tudor (Feb 1916), 662; Churchill urges Parliament not to have a repetition of (May 1916), 774; MAP, 575

Lord Nelson (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249ⁿ, 266; at Dardanelles but needing repair, 379; Churchill rejects Fisher's attempt to impose restrictions on de Robeck's use of, 388; Fisher recalls that despatch of, to Dardanelles was his own idea, 394; bombards Chanak, 412; MAP (18 March 1915), 353

Lord Warden Hotel (Dover, Kent): 676

Louis Francis Albert Victor Nicholas of Battenberg, Prince: 153

Louis, Prince, *see* Battenberg, Prince Louis Alexander of

Lowther, Claude: Churchill paints at home of (Aug 1916), 798

Lowther, James William: 681

Loxley, Arthur Noel: seeks to avert triple tragedy, 185

Lumley and Lumley: Churchill's solicitors, 511

Lusitania (British passenger liner): torpedoed (7 May 1915), 463ⁿ

Lutyens, Edwin Landseer: 493

Lutzen (Saxony) battle of (1813): 171

Luxembourg: German invasion of, 26

Lyceum Club (London): talk by G. Calza Bedolo to, 115

Lyttelton, Sir Neville: signs study of joint military and naval attack on Dardanelles (19 Dec 1906), 294ⁿ

McCracken, Frederick William Nicholas: Churchill's battalion inspected by (7 May 1916), 760

McDavid, Jock: recalls nature of the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers reserve area,

McDavid, Jock—*continued*

630-1; recalls the impression Churchill formed on reaching his battalion, 633; recalls Churchill's approach to those under his command, 635; recalls Churchill's attitude to discipline, 637-8; and Churchill's delousing efforts, 640; and Churchill's 'pep talk' to his officers when reaching the trenches, 651-2; and Churchill's first excursion into no-man's-land, 657-8; wounded (3 Feb 1916), 659-60; calls on Mrs Churchill in London (7 Feb 1916), 663; Mrs Churchill dines with (14 Feb 1916), 669; in hospital, 670; recalls Churchill's concern for a trench-crossing vehicle, 672-3

Macedonia: 213, 382

MacCallum Scott, Alexander: and Churchill's preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 805

McKee, Mrs Thomas: appeals to Churchill on behalf of her husband (May 1916), 777

McKenna, Mrs (Pamela Jekyll): Fisher expresses criticisms of Churchill to, 137; Fisher expresses criticisms of Prince Louis to, 148; Mrs Churchill lunches with, 693

McKenna, Reginald: present at emergency meeting of Ministers (31 Aug 1914), 60; receives criticisms of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127; his naval estimates opposed by Churchill (1909), 179; Asquith's praise of, 330; at War Council (10 March 1915), 333; reports to Asquith on alleged intrigue by Lloyd George and others, 362-3, 477; Fisher regards as an ally, 429, 434; Fisher appeals to (16 May 1915), 441-2; unenthusiastic about Fisher's resignation, 443; helps Hankey to get Fisher away to Scotland (22 May 1915), 467; becomes Chancellor of the Exchequer, 469; seen as an ally for Asquith against a Lloyd George-Curzon-Churchill plot (Oct 1915), 557; a member of the Cabinet

McKenna, Reginald—*continued*

War Committee (Nov 1915), 563; seems to Churchill like a mandarin 'of some remote province of China, (Nov 1915), 587; against Conscription (Dec 1915), 622-3; a possible Viceroy of India (1916), 683; 'enthroned' by Lloyd George at the Treasury, 691; Mrs Churchill reports on 'tepid counter-jumping calculation' of, 693; 'a most noxious creature', 694; and the belief in a Churchill intrigue with Sir John French, 702; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 732-3

Maclay, Ebenezer: killed in action in France (1918), 283*n*

Maclay, Sir Joseph Paton: 283

Maclay, William Strang: died of wounds at Gallipoli (1915), 283*n*

Maclean, Allan: reports German naval victory off Coronel, 158

Macnamara, Thomas James: Fisher insists on dismissal of, 452

Macready, Cecil Frederick Nevil: and the arrest of F. E. Smith while visiting Churchill on the western front (Jan 1916), 696

Madras (India): German light cruiser *Emden* bombards oil tanks at, 137*n*, 139

Maestricht Appendix (Holland): Churchill expects his aviators will fly across, 175

Magdeburg (German light cruiser): runs aground in Gulf of Finland, 179

Mahdi, the: destruction of his tomb (1898), 327*n*

Mahon, Bryan Thomas: and the Suvla Bay landings (Aug 1915), 522; commands British troops at Salonika (Oct 1915), 558*n*

Maidos (Gallipoli Peninsula): British seaplanes to attack, 369; Hamilton decides to land across the Peninsula from, 393; set on fire by British shells (April 1915), 412; Churchill wants renewed attack towards (Sept 1915), 540; MAPS, 403, 519

- Mainz* (German light cruiser): sunk in Heligoland Bight action (28 Aug 1914), 59
- Maison* 1875 (Ploegsteert, Belgium): company billets at, 650; shelled, 660: MAP, 649
- Majestic* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*; at Dardanelles, 331, 361*n*; sunk (27 May 1915), 472; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Mallet, Louis du Pan: takes Churchill's message to Enver, 195; informs Churchill of movement of German sailors, 197; sends Cunliffe-Owen's report to London (27 Aug 1914), 199; Churchill protests about attitude to Turkey of, 207-8, 210; instructed to protest against German influence in Constantinople, 211; believes war with Turkey could still be avoided (31 Oct 1914), 216
- Malta: Churchill meets Kitchener at (1912), 12; Admiral Milne instructed to remain near, 26; Churchill gives French Admiralty facilities at, 31; Mallet wants Limpus to be sent to, 207; Churchill wants troop transports assembled at, 220; *Indefatigable* to go to, 250; Dardanelles fleet to be fitted with mine-bumpers at, 254, 256, 428; Asquith believes troops for Dardanelles could be found at, 286; Royal Naval Division to collect medical supplies at, 306; anti-mine nets sent to Dardanelles from, 390; four British battleships to leave Dardanelles for, 422; Churchill proposes (16 May 1915) sending as many ships as possible from the Dardanelles to, 443; Churchill wants Gallipoli Peninsula troop reinforcements assembled at (June 1915), 497
- Malta Conference (1912): Churchill impressed by Kitchener at, 12
- Manchester Guardian*: praises Churchill for troop transportation, 37; for frankness, 38; for his London Opera House speech (11 Sept 1914), 76; for his Liverpool speech (21 Sept 1914), 84-5; its editor hears Churchill and Lloyd
- Manchester Guardian—continued*
- George criticize further offensives on the western front (Sept 1915), 541; welcomed by Churchill as an ally (Dec 1915), 596; supports Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 722, 732; said to be the only paper to report Churchill's parliamentary speeches (Nov 1916), 816
- Marconi affair (1912): Lloyd George's 'failure' in, 495; Churchill's belief that Lloyd George owed him a debt as a result of, 623*n*, 751
- Marine Brigade: to form part of Royal Naval Division, 47, 51; sent by Churchill to Ostend, 56; sent by Churchill to Dunkirk, 73; bus drivers enlist in, 74
- Marix, Reginald Lennox George: at Dunkirk air base, 68; on bombing raid from Antwerp to Cologne (22 Sept 1914), 89; on raid from Antwerp to Düsseldorf (9 Oct 1914), 123, 136
- Markham, Sir Arthur Basil: supports Churchill's criticisms of Asquith (March 1916), 711, 713; a member of the Liberal War Committee, 735*n*; urges Churchill's return from the trenches to Parliament (April 1916), 749-50
- Marlborough, 1st Duke of, *see* Churchill, John
- Marlborough, 9th Duke of (Charles Richard John Spencer-Churchill): reconciliation with Churchill, 35-6; Colonel-in-Chief, Oxfordshire Hussars, 73; acts as War Office messenger, 339; and the crisis of May 1915, 468, 476; informs Churchill of Admiralty complacency (Feb 1916), 702
- Marlborough, 10th Duke of, *see* Blandford, Marquis of
- Marlowe, Thomas: 126
- Marmara, Sea of: *Goeben* in, 193; Limpus suggest sending torpedo craft into, 198; Churchill recalls importance of sending a fleet into, at earliest possible moment, 200; Churchill instructs War Office to draw up plans making it

Marmara, Sea of—*continued*

possible for fleet to enter, 202; plan for a joint Anglo-Greek fleet to enter, 204–5; British plan to enter, 248, 257; Kitchener believes Anzac troops ‘good enough’ for a cruise in, 303; Balfour believes ships alone will secure allied command of, 308; Turkey’s principal arsenals on shore of, vulnerable to naval bombardment, 319; Admiral Carden’s instructions (5 March 1915) in the event of his entering, 326–7; Admiral de Robeck reluctant to enter (25 March 1915), 369; Churchill believes arrival of ships in, will cut off Turkish army on Gallipoli Peninsula, 370; de Robeck’s plans to penetrate, 391, 393; Jack Churchill envisages British ships within two weeks of Gallipoli landings, 408; Churchill wants further naval effort to penetrate (Aug 1915), 525; MAP, 840–1

Marmarice (Turkey): Lewis Harcourt suggests annexation of, 334; MAP, 838
Marne, Battle of (Sept 1914): 71–2, 104, 213

Marseilles (France): 37, 205, 206, 522

Marsh, Edward Howard: finds recruits for Royal Naval Division, 49; his relations with Churchill, 95; rebukes Robinson for criticism of Churchill in *The Times*, 153*n*; sends Grey a correction of Churchill’s minute, 175; asks Grey to approve Buxton mission to Balkans, 201; will translate a Latin phrase for Churchill, 299; informs Violet Asquith of Rupert Brooke’s illness, 401; and Brooke’s death, 402; allowed to go with Churchill to Duchy of Lancaster, 485; and Churchill’s early painting experiments, 502; and Churchill’s departure for the front (Nov 1915), 571; ‘much excited’ at Churchill being with the Guards, 583; Churchill writes to from St Omer (Dec 1915), 595, 610; accompanies Churchill to Africa (1908), 661*n*; and Churchill’s appeal for Fisher’s return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 722;

Marsh, Edward Howard—*continued*

and the publication of the Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 784

Matapan, Cape (Greece): *Goeben* reaches, 41

Mary, Queen: 454

Massingham, Henry William: reports on alleged anti-Asquith intrigue, 361–2, 477

Masterman, Charles Frederick Gurney: receives critical report of Churchill’s actions at Antwerp, 127; anti-Turk, 211

Masterton-Smith, James Edward: his relations with Churchill, 95; and Fisher’s refusal to allow de Robeck to attack the Kephez minefield, 422; and the crisis of May 1915, 436, 437–8, 448, 456, 468; Churchill uses as an intermediary with Balfour, 485, 498, 507, 515, 516, 517; and Admiralty papers, 511; and use of Monitors at the Dardanelles (Sept 1915), 542; and Churchill’s defence of his naval air policy (Oct 1915), 561; and Churchill’s departure for the front (Nov 1915), 571; and Mrs Churchill’s telephone conversation with her husband at St Omer (Dec 1915), 605; and the publication of Dardanelles documents (June 1916), 784

Maurice Victor Donald of Battenberg, Prince: died of wounds received in action, 149, 152

Maurois, André, *see* Herzog, Emile Salomon Wilhelm

Maxse, Ernest George Berkeley: reports speculation that Holland is about to be attacked by Germany (26 March 1915), 373–4

Maxwell, Sir John Grenfell: prepares to resist Turks along Suez Canal (Jan 1915), 270; reports on desertion of large numbers of Turkish troops (Feb 1915), 279

May, Sir William Henry: member of Dardanelles Commission, 789

Mears, Edward Grimwood: Churchill writes to about his Dardanelles policy (19 Oct 1916), 812–13

- Mecca (Turkey): Kitchener wants transferred from Turkish to British control, 355
- Medea* (Dutch merchant vessel): sunk by the Germans, 378
- Mehmed Reshad Effendi, Sultan Mehmed V: subservient to Young Turks, 189; Kitchener believes he will abandon Constantinople on hearing of allied naval success at the Dardanelles, 303, 309; said to be 'anxious' about continuation of the war, 396
- Mehmed Said Halim: cannot counteract Enver's pro-German policy, 197; reported aware of dangers of a pro-German policy, 198
- Memories* (Lord Fisher): quoted on Fisher's attempt to leave the War Council (28 Jan 1915), 271
- Memories of a Turkish Statesman* (Djemal Pasha): quoted, 212
- Mensdorff-Pouilly-Dietrichstein, Albert: Churchill arranges his departure from England, 45-6
- Mercer Nairne, Lord Charles George Francis: killed in action, 228*n*
- Merris (France): headquarters of the Ninth (Scottish) Division, 628; MAP, 631
- Merville (France): Churchill sees 'hideous spectacle' of wounded men at (May 1915), 416; Churchill summoned to, from the front line (Nov 1915), 584; 2nd Battalion Grenadier Guards in reserve at (Dec 1915), 588; MAP, 575
- Mesopotamia: Lloyd George believes expedition to 'merely a side issue', 301; probable effect of British success at the Dardanelles on, 324; Fisher wants to annex Alexandretta as an outlet for oil supplies from, 333; Kitchener wants British annexation of, to keep Russia away from, 349; Grey favours setting up of an independent Arab State in, 355; Harcourt proposes as 'an outlet for Indian immigration', 373; Churchill upset by military setbacks in (Dec 1915), 590; Fisher forecasts disaster in (March 1916), 736; MAP, 839
- Messina (Italy): *Goeben* streams towards, 26; *Goeben* leaves, 28; *Goeben* returns to, 40, 42; MAP, 29
- Meteren (France): Churchill joins the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers in reserve near, 630; MAP, 631
- Methuen, Ethel Christian: Asquith attends wedding of, 438*n*
- Methuen, 3rd Baron (Paul Sanford Methuen): 438*n*
- Metz: 146
- Meux, Sir Hedworth: George V suggests as possible First Sea Lord (Oct 1914), 150; his maiden speech an attack on Churchill (March 1916), 723-5, 729
- Midia (Turkey): MAP, 841
- Mile End: by-election at (25 Jan 1916), 714
- Military Medal: Churchill critical of 'niggardly' distribution of (July 1916), 795
- Military Operations Gallipoli* (Aspinall-Oglander): 522*n*
- Military Service Bill: Sir John Simon's group opposes, 713*n*; introduced in House of Commons (3 May 1916), 758; Ireland excluded from, 761
- Millerand, Alexandre: 261
- Milne, Sir Archibald Berkeley: instructions to, 18, 26, 28, 29, 30; fails to concert action with French admiral, 40; his actions approved, 41; Churchill critical of, 42; ordered to establish blockade of Dardanelles (11 Aug 1914), 194
- Milner, 1st Baron (Alfred Milner): Churchill urged to join forces with (Dec 1915), 591; appeals for compulsory military service (April 1916), 755-6; unwilling to be reconciled with Churchill (May 1916), 761; and Kitchener's death (June 1916), 781; joins Lloyd George's War Cabinet (Dec 1916), 822
- Minerva* (British light cruiser): ordered to Akaba, 216; bombards Akaba, 217, 219
- Misu, Nicolae: Grey protests to, 372

- Mitchell, Cyril John Francis: at Antwerp, 117
- Moated Grange Trench (near Neuve Chapelle): 580; MAP, 577
- Mobilization, of the British Fleet: Churchill orders test of, 3, 6-7; Cabinet refuses to sanction, 23; Asquith approves, 25
- Monarch* (British battleship): collision with *Conqueror* (27 Dec 1914) impairs British naval margin, 268
- Mond, Sir Alfred Moritz: supports Churchill's criticisms of Asquith (March 1916), 711, 713; a member of the Liberal War Committee, 735*n*; votes against the Government in the Nigeria debate (Nov 1916), 815*n*
- Monmouth* (British cruiser): off South America, 156; sunk at battle off Coronel (1 Nov 1914), 157-8, 182
- Monro, Sir Charles Carmichael: replaces Sir Ian Hamilton at Gallipoli (28 Oct 1915), 554; advocates evacuation of Gallipoli (31 Oct 1915), 563
- Mons (Belgium): British troops at, 53; retreat from, 69-70, 104; MAP, 54
- Montagu, Edwin Samuel: his dislike of Churchill reported, 329-30; worried about Balfour's influence over Lloyd George and Churchill, 361; Asquith describes 'superstitious mind' of, 362; present at quarrel between Lloyd George and Churchill, 383; engaged to marry Venetia Stanley, 446; writes to Mrs Churchill 'have no misgivings as to the future' (26 May 1915), 472; Churchill seeks three rooms from, 485; suggested as deputy to Asquith at War Office (Nov 1915), 560; 'imperious', 626; gives Mrs Churchill his impression of the Cabinet (Jan 1916), 689
- Montagu, Mrs (*for earlier references, see Stanley, Venetia*): Mrs Churchill dines with, 583; entertains Asquith (Dec 1915), 626
- Montenegro: possibility of action against Austria, 200-2, 229; Sir J. French favours sending British troops in support of, 237; MAPS, 235, 545, 842
- Montevideo (Uruguay): British ships concentrate near, 182
- Montgomery, Robert Arthur: and conscription (Aug 1915), 528
- Moolenacker (France): Churchill's battalion billeted at, 630; Churchill reaches (5 Jan 1916), 631; a more relaxed atmosphere at, 641; Churchill leaves (24 Jan 1916), 646; MAP, 631
- Moore, Archibald Gordon Henry Wilson: 192
- Moore, Arthur: reports on 'terrible defeat' of British forces at Mons, 69-70
- Morgenthau, Henry, 322, 327
- Morley of Blackburn, 1st Viscount (John Morley): resigns from Cabinet (Aug 1914), 27; appeals for compulsory military service (April 1916), 755
- Morning Post*: Churchill often denounced in, 33; dislikes Churchill's reference to German Fleet as 'rats in a hole', 84; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 125-9, 180; critical of Churchill's conduct of Admiralty business, 144; publishes report (25 March 1915) of reinforcements on way to Turkey, 371; attacks Fisher (Feb 1916), 705; critical of Churchill's Admiralty administration (Feb 1916), 706; its editor believes he has uncovered an intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Sept 1916), 811; opposed to Churchill's inclusion in Lloyd George's Cabinet (Dec 1916), 822-3
- Morocco: British recognition of French paramountcy in (1904), 333*n*
- Mount of Olives (Turkey): Lloyd George does not wish to see under French control, 343
- Mudania (Turkey): 501; MAP, 841
- Mudros Bay (Lemnos): an ideal shelter for allied ships, 281, 346; problem of British control of, 298-9; Hamilton wishes to move troops to Egypt from, 360; technical discussions on the Gallipoli landing begin at (11 April 1915), 393; Churchill advises Balfour (26 May 1915) to keep the Dardanelles fleet in the safety of, 471; Sir Charles

- Mudros Bay (Lemnos)—*continued*
 Monro reaches (Oct 1915), 554; MAP, 840
- Mundy, Godfrey Harry Brydges: rebuked for delay in despatch of ships, 183
- Munitions, Ministry of: Lloyd George appointed to (May 1915), 470; Churchill hopes to succeed Lloyd George at (Dec 1915), 622; Churchill learns of Lloyd George's willingness to give him a department of (Dec 1915), 622; Churchill sees as 'the easiest opening for me' (April 1916), 751; Churchill compares difficulties in establishment of, with those of an Air Ministry (May 1916), 768; Churchill hopes to succeed Lloyd George at (June 1916), 781-3; Dr Addison succeeds Lloyd George at (Dec 1916), 822
- Munstead House (Godalming, Surrey): McKenna sulks at his father-in-law's home at (Dec 1915), 623
- Murray, Alexander William Charles Oliphant: Churchill asks his wife to keep in touch with (Jan 1916), 689
- Murray, Harriet (Mrs Jock McDavid): 669*n*
- Murray, Sir James Wolfe: at War Council (25 Nov 1914), 176; at War Council Sub-Committee (28 Jan 1915), 273
- Muslims: Britain rules more than are ruled by any other power, 189; fears of Turkish pressure on, 195; Kitchener much concerned with problems of, 308*n*; Churchill instructs that objects venerated by in Constantinople should 'be treated with the utmost respect', 327; Grey wants establishment of an independent State for, 355; Kitchener raises spectre of rising of, in Egypt, 423; Kitchener fears rising of, if Gallipoli abandoned, 432
- My African Journey* (Winston S. Churchill): 661*n*
- Nalder, John Fielding: in armoured car skirmish near Cassel (Sept 1914), 69
- Namur (Belgium): defended by Belgians, 53; captured by Germans, 54-5; importance of fall of to military thinking about Dardanelles, 295; MAP, 54
- Napier, Henry Dundas: proposes British attack on Bulgaria (Oct 1915), 553
- Napier, Henry Edward: killed at Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 409
- Napier-Clavering, Francis Donald: recalls Churchill's interest in trench fortifications, 671-2; and Churchill's search for a trench-crossing vehicle, 672-3; his work at Laurence Farm, 676
- Napoleon Bonaparte: Churchill warned not to emulate, 129; sends Villeneuve to sea, 145; his boy-soldiers cited by Churchill, 171; his failure to crush nations cited by Haldane, 355-6; his strategy of 1805 praised by Balfour, 389; Churchill returns bust of, to Northcliffe, 782
- Nation*, the: 361, 477
- National Liberal Club (London): Churchill plans (Feb 1916) to unveil portrait at, 707; Churchill gives up plans to unveil portrait at, 708
- National Review*: 579*n*
- Naval Estimates: crisis of January 1914, 87
- Naval Memoirs of Sir Roger Keyes*, *The*: quoted, 563*n*
- Neeld, Mrs (Beatrix Fisher): interned by the Germans, but released, 146
- Neeld, Reginald Rundell: interned by the Germans, but released, 146
- Nelson, Horatio: sent to Mediterranean, 16; his height referred to by Lord Fisher, 145
- Nethe, River (Belgium): Royal Marines defend, 114-16
- Neuve Chapelle (France): Churchill trains with the Guards in the trenches near, 574, 605; Churchill visits front-line trenches at, 624; Thomas McKee wounded in throat at battle of, 777; MAPS, 575, 577
- Newcastle upon Tyne (Northumberland): Asquith's speech at (20 April 1915), 430

- Newfoundland: troops cross Atlantic from, 37
- Newton, Henry: his factory at Hazebrouck, 696-7
- New York Herald*: 538*n*
- New Zealand: refuses to send troops to Europe without British naval escort, 89-90; ratio of troops to inhabitants, 794*n*
- Nice (France): Fisher claims he is about to depart for (12 May 1915), 421
- Nicholas Nicolaevitch, Grand Duke: Churchill proposes Anglo-Russian co-operation in Baltic to, 52, 84; his appeal for British help to reduce Turkish pressure in Caucasus, 231-3, 260; regrets Russia cannot take naval initiative in Black Sea, 266; says Russian action against Constantinople dependent upon British ships entering the sea of Marmara, 315; his instructions to the Russian Black Sea Fleet, 344; Churchill appeals to in vain to remove Russian veto on Greek participation at the Dardanelles (March 1915), 345; Churchill wants British troops to be sent to help (May 1916), 772
- Nicolson, Sir Arthur: urged to prevent further irritation of Swiss opinion, 175; 'we were before the unknown', 192; learns that Admiralty have ordered hostilities against Turkey, 216; warns Tewfik Pasha about further British hostilities, 217; informs Admiralty that Britain and Turkey are at war, 219
- Nicholson, 1st Baron (William Gustavus): on Dardanelles Commission, 789
- Nieppe (France): Headquarters of the 9th (Scottish) Division, 661, 664; MAPS, 631, 649
- Nieuport (Belgium): Joffre wants British naval action against German positions near (16 Oct 1914), 135
- Nigeria: Churchill wants use of troops from 'for war or for labour' (July 1916), 794; Asquith challenged over disposal of German property in (Oct 1916), 815
- Nikolaev (Russia): bombarded (29 Oct 1914), 215
- 1914 (Viscount French of Ypres): quoted on allegations in *The Times* (14 May 1915) of shell shortage at battle of Aubers Ridge, 430
- Nish (Serbia): proposed allied advance to, 302
- Nordenfelt: obsolete machine gun, destroyed, 326
- Northcliffe, 1st Baron (Alfred Charles William Harmsworth): Churchill protests about 'Amiens' despatch to, 70; his papers critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 126, 131; alleged to be trying to replace Asquith by Lloyd George (March 1915), 362; Churchill describes as supporting Lloyd George against Asquith (June 1915), 495; Callwell fears he will discover the facts about conscription (Aug 1915), 528; and discontent with Asquith's Coalition (Oct 1915), 552, 556, 557; on Lord Esher's strange status in France, 589*n*; attacked by Simon (Nov 1915), 593; and the Marconi affair (1912), 623*n*; and growing anti-Asquith feeling (Jan-Feb 1916), 699-700, 703, 704; refuses to support Churchill's attacks on Asquith (March 1916), 737; Garvin urges Churchill to write articles for, 747-8; refuses to consider publishing articles by Churchill (April 1916), 751; quarrel with Churchill (June 1916), 781-2; Haig defends Somme offensive to, 792; his *Daily Mail* describes Churchill as a 'megalomaniac' (Oct 1916), 811-12
- North Sea: true war station for the First Fleet, 8; Fleet sails secretly to, 9, 12; not defenceless, 31; British blockade of, 46; British naval victory in, essential prelude to Baltic operations, 84; Asquith advises laying of mines in, 93; Churchill resurrects plan for naval offensive across, 225, 234, 235; ships sent to Dardanelles not needed in, 233; Churchill wants to cut off German access to, 241; Fisher wants Britain to

North Sea—*continued*

concentrate its naval strength and action in, 259, 263-4; and Dogger Bank action, 261-2; *Daily Mail* said to have revealed secret information about naval movements in, 270; Fisher insists (16 March 1915) that it is 'the decisive theatre', 347; Fisher wants *Inflexible* and *Queen Elizabeth* in, following reported German threat to Holland, 375; Fisher insists is the place 'where we can beat the Germans', 426; German High Sea Fleet thought to be about to sail into (17 May 1915), 448; the prospect of a decisive naval battle in (17-18 May 1915), 449-50; MAPS, 19, 842

Notre Dame de Lorette (France): Churchill visits trenches at (Dec 1915), 625; MAP, 575

Number of People, A (Sir Edward Marsh): quoted, on Churchill's early painting experiments, 502

Nürnberg (German light cruiser): 156, 158

Observer, the: reconciled to Churchill on outbreak of war, 38, 127; defends Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 128; publishes defence of Churchill's wartime Admiralty administration (23 May 1915), 468-9; supports Churchill, 596, 702

Ocean (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249n, 265; at Dardanelles, 331; strikes a mine (18 March 1915), 352, 397n; sinks, 353, 354; most of her crew rescued, 361n, 371; Fisher upset by loss of, 379; MAP (18 March 1915), 353

O'Connor, Thomas Power: declares Churchill's resignation a 'national tragedy' (Nov 1915), 569

Ode on the Coronation of Edward VII (Sir W. Watson): 146n

Odessa (Russia): bombarded (29 Oct 1914), 215; MAP, 842

Oldenburg (Germany): Churchill wants invasion of (4 Jan 1915), 236

Oliver, Henry Francis: prepares battleship statistics, 8; accompanies Churchill to Dunkirk, 73; accompanies Churchill to Loch Ewe, 82; enthusiastic about air raids on German Zeppelin sheds, 89; at Antwerp, 101, 107, 120; becomes Chief of Staff at the Admiralty, 153; and battle off Coronel, 157; receives copies of intercepted German naval telegrams, 179; member of Admiralty War Group, 185-6, 250; can find no plans for bombardment of Dardanelles (31 Oct 1914), 216; impressed by effect of German guns on the Antwerp forts, 220; wants troop transports kept in Egypt as preparation for attack on Dardanelles, 221; Churchill informs (3 Jan 1915) of plan for a North Sea offensive, 234; shows Churchill's plan to Richmond (4 Jan 1915), 136; supports naval attack at Dardanelles, 238; and planning of Dardanelles attack, 253, 255, 258, 265; and Dogger Bank action, 261; gives War Council a survey of Dardanelles plan of attack (28 Jan 1915), 275; wants Royal Naval Division sent to Dardanelles, 279; and the loading of ships for the Dardanelles, 298; and the appointment of a Governor of Lemnos, 299; Sir H. Jackson urges need for military participation at Dardanelles on, 336; wants de Robeck to make a second attempt to force the Narrows by ships alone, 366; and Fisher's opposition to the Dardanelles, 394; Richmond declares his advice 'not taken', 399; and rumours of twelve German submarines converging on Dardanelles, 400; and withdrawal of *Queen Elizabeth* from Dardanelles, 422; and the crisis of May 1915, 448; Fisher proposes abolition of his post of Chief of Staff, 453; Churchill advises about Dardanelles Commission evidence (Oct 1916), 813-14

Ollivant, Alfred Henry: and offensive against Germany, 20; used by Churchill

- Ollivant, Alfred Henry—*continued*
to influence Lloyd George, 23-4; in command of sending Marine and Yeomanry force to Dunkirk, 73, 74; and the origin of the 'tank', 534
- Olympic* (passenger liner): sinking of *Audacious* witnessed by passengers on, 141
- Omdurman, battle of (1898): Churchill and Hugh Dawnay at, 81; Churchill has met most of the Staff of the IIInd Corps at, 646
- O'Neill, Arthur Edward Bruce: killed in action, 228
- Orde, Sir John: superseded by Nelson, 16
- Orpen, William: paints Churchill's portrait (1916), 792-3
- Ostend (Belgium): Churchill sends Marine Brigade to, 56, 74, 114; possibility of transfer of Russian troops to, 58; Royal Naval Air Service air base at, 88; reported bombed by German airship, 91; Belgian appeal for troops at, 98; difficulty of defending Antwerp from, 99; Belgians talk of moving Government to, 101, 103, 106; Belgians decide not to move to, 112; General Rawlinson at, 113; guns for Antwerp fail to arrive at, 116; British forces disembarking at (6 Oct 1914), 116; British forces unable to get beyond (8 Oct 1914), 122; Spenser-Grey and Marix escape to (9 Oct 1914), 124; British troops from Antwerp escape to, 131; Germans occupy, 135; 'damnable' if Germans remain in, 136; fears of German submarine base at, 139, 162; Churchill eager for a coastal attack towards, 168, 180
- Other Club, The: first wartime meeting of (6 Aug 1914), 35
- Otranto* (British merchant cruiser): off South America, 156-8, 182
- Ottley, Sir Charles Langdale: sent to Constantinople (1913), 190; sees (1906) no reason to despair of success of a joint naval and military attack at the Dardanelles, 294
- Owler, Stewart: at siege of Antwerp, 122n
- Oxfordshire Hussars: Jack Churchill about to leave for France with (Sept 1914), 58; cross to France, 73; part of Churchill's 'Dunkirk Circus', 137; under fire near Ypres (Nov 1914), 160-1; Churchill offered command of a battalion of (June 1915), 495; possibility of Churchill serving in France with (Sept 1915), 530, and (Nov 1915), 564; a command in, not seen as offering Churchill much scope for his energies (Nov 1915), 566; Churchill decides to join in France (Nov 1915), 570-1; Churchill visits headquarters of in France (18 Nov 1915), 572; Clementine Churchill wishes her husband would stay with, 609
- Oxfordshire Hussars in the Great War, The* (Adrian Keith-Falconer): quoted, 73
- Pacific Ocean: Japanese activities in, 42; von Spee crosses, 156, 160; Japanese navy has effective command of, 178
- Pakenham, William Christopher: on Churchill's work at the Admiralty, 482
- Paget, Sir Arthur Henry Fitzroy: reports from Bulgaria on impact of Dardanelles bombardment, 348; said to be working to reconcile Serbs and Bulgars, 396
- Painting as a Pastime* (Winston S. Churchill): 503n
- Paissy (France): Churchill observes shells bursting in (16 Sept 1914), 81
- Palestine (Turkey): Turkish army moving towards Egypt through, 220; Lloyd George favours annexation, of, 333; Asquith reports on Cabinet views about the future of, 343-4; MAP, 838
- Palestine Exploration Fund: Kitchener attached to (1874), 9n, 308n
- Pall Mall Gazette*: 38n, 711n; defends Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127; Fisher sends Bonar Law a cutting from, 444
- Panderma (Turkey): 501; MAP, 841

- Paris, Archibald: commands Marine Brigade at Dunkirk (Sept 1914), 73; instructions to, 93; at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 109, 115, 116, 118, 121-2; discusses Antwerp with King Albert, 125; wants to land at Smyrna rather than on Gallipoli Peninsula (April 1915), 392; Churchill sends message for Royal Naval Division to (18 May 1915), 451
- Paris (France): Sir John French announces intention to retire behind (31 Aug 1914), 59; Kitchener and French meet in, 60-1; British Expeditionary Force in retreat towards, 62; Germans driven away from, 71, 213; Churchill participates in Anglo-Franco-Italian negotiations in (May 1915), 414; Churchill's plan to meet his wife in (Dec 1915), 620
- Parnell, William Alastair Damer: in trench raid (Dec 1915), 607
- Parsons, Mrs (Viola Tree): 90
- Pease, Joseph Albert: records Churchill's remarks in Cabinet (29 July 1914), 10; (26 Aug 1914), 57; (2 Sept 1914), 204; receives critical report of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 127; on Cabinet decision about Turkey (30 Oct 1914), 215
- Pegasus* (British light cruiser): sunk off Zanzibar, 184, 187
- Peirse, Sir Richard H.: instructed to harass Turkish troop movements, 222
- Penang harbour (Straits Settlements): *Emden* sinks Russian and French warships in, 137*n*
- Pepys, Sir Samuel: 348
- Perfect, Katherine Elizabeth: 24
- Persia: Russians hard pressed by Turks in north of, 232; Britain wants Russia to curb its southward pressure in, 320; Fisher wants to annex Alexandretta in order to secure an outlet for oil supplies from, 333; continued German and Turkish influence in, 349; Turks active in, 686; MAP, 839
- Persia* (British liner): torpedoed, 688*n*
- Persian Gulf: possibility of anti-Turkish action in, 198, 199, 200; Government of India lands military force at head of, 221; MAP, 839
- Petrograd (Russia): MAP, 842
- Phaeton* (British light cruiser): takes Sir Ian Hamilton to Dardanelles, 342; at the Dardanelles, 352, 353
- Philadelphia Public Ledger*: publishes photograph of the sinking *Audacious* (14 Nov 1914), 142
- Philippeville (Algeria): bombarded by *Goeben*, 29; MAP, 29
- Phillips, James Faulkner: 803
- Pickford, Sir William: a member of the Dardanelles Commission, 789, 809
- Plevna, siege of (1877): 243, 317
- Ploegsteert (Belgium): Churchill's battalion allocated to (Jan 1916), 635; Churchill visits, 645; Churchill's battalion in front line trenches at (Jan-May 1916), chapter 21, 648-78; Churchill returns to (13 March 1916), 737; Churchill leaves (19 April 1916); Churchill ordered to return to (27 April 1916), 758; Churchill and his battalion leave (3 May 1916), 759; German air superiority above, 763; MAPS, 575, 631, 649
- Plymouth (Devon): *Invincible* and *Inflexible* undergo urgent repairs at, 183
- Pola (Austrian port on the Adriatic): German battle cruiser *Goeben* about to leave, 17; MAPS, 29, 842
- 'Pola': chosen as code name for the Dardanelles attack, 253
- Politicians and the War* (Lord Beaverbrook): Asquith letter critical of Churchill quoted in, 90; Churchill's annotations on the proof of, concerning Conservative participation at the War Council (10 March 1915), 335*n*; Churchill's annotation on the proof of concerning his wartime visits to France, 425*n*; on Churchill's mood of 18 May 1915, 455; Churchill's comment on publication of a letter of his in, 463*n*; on Churchill's departure for the front in Nov 1915, 571; on

Politicians and the War—continued

- Churchill and the political crisis of December 1916, 819, 821–2
- Pomerania (Germany): Fisher designs cruisers for invasion of coast of, 272
- Ponders End (Middlesex): Mrs Churchill's YMCA canteen at, 669; Lloyd George opens canteen at (3 Feb 1916), 698–9
- Ponsonby, Arthur Augustus William Harry: warns Churchill about war atmosphere, 21
- Port Arthur (Russian territory on the coast of China; Japanese after 1905): Russian Fleet caught unawares at (1904), 13; possibility of Japan allowing transit of Russian troops for Gallipoli through, 205; Churchill compares siege of, in Russo-Japanese war (1904–5) with operations on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 427–8
- Portland (Dorset): Fleet ordered not to leave, 6–7; Fleet ordered to leave, 9
- Port Said (Egypt): 206
- Portugal: Alliance of 1386 with England, 7ⁿ
- Postmaster-General: Churchill suggests as suitable post for Sir Max Aitken (Dec 1916), 821
- Prentis, Osmond James: commands *Wolverine* off Smyrna, 217ⁿ
- Press, the: agrees to voluntary censorship (27 July 1914), 8; seeks fuller information of military developments, 70–1; not informed of Churchill's visit to France (10 Sept 1914), 72; critical of Churchill's visits to France, 90; critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 125–6, 129, 132–3, 137; critical of Government prosecution of the war, 139; attacks on Prince Louis for his German birth, 148; Churchill wants to escape attacks of, 164; Churchill praises in Parliament (27 Nov 1914), 178; War Council discusses alleged indiscretions of (28 Jan 1915), 270–1; Churchill upset by criticisms of, 285; Churchill's Constituency Chairman unwilling to be influenced by criticisms

Press, the—continued

- in (May 1915), 460–1; Churchill criticizes (5 June 1915) the 'irresponsible' attack of, 489–90; Churchill on 'malice' of (7 July 1915), 509; critical of Churchill's description of the Dardanelles as 'a legitimate gamble' (Nov 1915), 569; and Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 725; and Churchill's recall from the trenches, 758; 'amazingly vicious' (June 1916), 783; Churchill's conflict with (Nov–Dec 1916), 816, 822–3, 826
- Press Bureau: alters 'Amiens' despatch of *The Times*, 70; Churchill's communiqué issued through, 71; unwilling to suppress Press criticisms of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 129; Foreign Office issue statement to about Turkey (31 Oct 1914), 217
- Prince George* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249ⁿ; at Dardanelles, 331; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Prince of Wales* (British Battleship): ordered by Fisher to the Dardanelles (19 March 1915), 354, 358; to leave Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 422
- Princes Islands (Turkey): 344
- Pringle, William Mather Rutherford: believes Churchill involved in the Repington disclosures of 14 May 1915, 460, 702
- Prinz Eitel Freidrich* (German armoured cruiser): believed to be at large, 264
- Privy Council: Prince Louis wishes to be a member of, 149; Asquith agrees to appoint Prince Louis to, 152
- Public Record Act (1967): opens British Government records after thirty years, 200ⁿ
- Queen* (British battleship): ordered by Fisher to go to the Dardanelles, 343; on way to Dardanelles, 354, 358; to leave Dardanelles, 422
- Queen Elizabeth* (British battleship): to go to the Dardanelles, 250, 251, 253, 254, 256, 260, 268, 269; at the Dardanelles,

Queen Elizabeth—continued

- 300, 331; in the naval attack (18 March 1915), 352; ammunition available for fire across the Gallipoli Peninsula, 358; conference of naval and military commanders held on board (22 March 1915), 363; de Robeck proposes to bombard Chanak by indirect fire across Peninsula from, 369, 382; Fisher wants in North Sea, in view of reported German threat to Holland, 375, 379; will return to home waters, Churchill tells Jellicoe, as soon as attack on Dardanelles successful, 385; Churchill rejects Fisher's attempt to impose restrictions on de Robeck's use of, 388; conference of naval and military commanders held on board (10 April 1915), 392; at Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 405-6, 407, 409; naval conference held on board (9 May 1915), 417; Churchill agrees with Fisher's request (12 May 1915) to recall from Dardanelles, 422-3, 433; Kitchener protests about withdrawal of to War Council (14 May 1915), 431, 434, 806; withdrawn, 474; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Quilter, John Arnold Cuthbert: at Blandford review (25 Feb 1915), 306
- Radoslavov, Vasil: and the Bulgarian reaction to the bombardment of the Dardanelles, 335, 348
- Ragusa (Austria-Hungary): Kitchener opposes landing at, 244
- Rawlinson, Sir Henry Seymour: Churchill meets in France (16 Sept 1914), 81; appointed to command British forces at Antwerp, 113; on way to Antwerp (5 Oct 1914), 114, 115; his forces still disembarking (6 Oct 1914), 116, 117; reaches Antwerp (afternoon of 6 Oct 1914), 118; leaves Antwerp (evening of 6 Oct 1914), 120; to join with Belgians at Ghent, 122; sees value of armoured cars, 163; receives details of an alleged intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig, 811
- Randolph Payne & Sons (wine merchants): Churchill's £500 debt to, 511
- Rats: Mrs Churchill thinks she would mind them 'more than the bullets', 593; Churchill points out useful rôle of, on western front, 625
- 'Rats in a hole': Churchill reference to German Fleet (21 Sept 1914), 84
- Reading, 1st Baron (Rufus Daniel Isaacs): 457, 458, 691; and the Marconi affair, 623*n*, 751; opposed to Churchill's precipitate return from the trenches to Parliament (April 1916), 756; and Churchill's desire to succeed Lloyd George at the Ministry of Munitions (June 1916), 783; and 'gossip' about Government reconstruction (Aug 1916), 797
- Redmond, John Edward: 572
- Red Sea: Turkish gunboats to be intercepted in, 215; *Minerva* sails to Akaba from, 216; British cruisers in, 264
- Reed, Hamilton Lyster: at Suvla Bay (Aug 1915), 518, 520
- Reliance* (British repair ship): Fisher wants returned to home waters from the Dardanelles, 378
- Repington, Charles à Court: Churchill defends his Antwerp actions to, 131; alleges shell shortage in France responsible for the failure to seize Aubers Ridge, 430, 431; the effect of his allegations, 445; Churchill believed by some to have intrigued with, 460; Callwell fears he will find out the facts about conscription (Aug 1915), 528
- Reshadieh* (Turkish battleship): launched (Sept 1913), 190; taken over by Royal Navy, 192; renamed *Erin*, 192*n*; Churchill offers recompense for, 195-6; Turkish sailors from reach Constantinople, 197
- Revenge* (British battleship): to bombard German-held Channel coast, 136
- Reynolds Weekly Newspaper*: 711*n*
- Rhine, River: Churchill's plan to crush fortresses on, 72; Dutch neutrality a barrier to blockade of, 98; Churchill on German desire to control mouth of, 378

- Rhodes: 334; MAP, 838
- Ribblesdale, 4th Baron (Thomas Lister): and Gallipoli, 582
- Richmond, Herbert William: does not believe Churchill is sane, 50-1; writes of Churchill's 'lunatic hands', 110; finds Churchill 'in low spirits' (24 Oct 1914), 140; discusses possibility of Gallipoli landing with War Office representatives (1 Sept 1914), 203; believes Churchill's plan for a North Sea offensive '*quite mad*', 236; favours demonstration against Turkey, 257; determined to undermine Churchill's North Sea plans, 258; describes Fisher as 'old & worn out & nervous', 260; wants Royal Naval Division sent to Dardanelles to 'finish off their training properly', 279; opposes attack on Dardanelles unless army is sent to act with navy, 286-7; is told of secret negotiations of 1915 with Turkey, 359*n*; wants to abandon the Dardanelles and land 80,000 British troops at Haifa, 389; believes Fisher 'useless' and Churchill 'ignorant' (22 April 1915), 399
- Richmond (Surrey): 269
- Riddell, Sir George Allardice: at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; Churchill explains (22 April 1915) why Dardanelles attack must go on, 397; Churchill explains (29 April 1915) the importance of the fall of Constantinople to, 411; Kitchener explains (13 May 1915) the importance of the Dardanelles expedition to, 427; finds Churchill 'very worn out and harassed' (20 May 1915), 457; records Lloyd George's discontent with Asquith (Jan-Feb 1916), 703-5; and Lloyd George's attitude to Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 725; and Lloyd George's criticisms of Asquith and Balfour (April 1916), 755
- Riez Bailleul (France): Churchill in reserve billets at (Nov 1915), 586, 588; MAP, 575
- Rimington, Michael Frederic: anxious to work in conjunction with armoured cars, 291
- Rio de Janeiro: von Spee expected on trade route of, 182
- Ritchie, Archibald Buchanan: 'impressed' by the shell damage to Churchill's billets, 660
- Ritchie, Sir George: resents the 'unjust outcry' against Churchill (May 1915), 461; Churchill seeks opinion of (March 1916), 745; advises Churchill against criticizing Asquith's war policies, 747
- Ritz Hotel (London): Fisher wishes he had become manager of, 441
- Ritz Hotel (Paris): Churchill stays incognito at, 414, 425
- River Clyde* (British collier): run aground at Gallipoli landing (25 April 1915), 404, 405-6, 408-9, 410
- River War, The* (Winston S. Churchill): severe censures on Kitchener in, 327*n*
- Robertson, Sir George Scott: speaks in Churchill's defence in House of Commons (16 Dec 1915), 614
- Robertson, Sir William Robert: Fisher wants in command of attack on Turkey, 234; describes Gallipoli landings as 'the stiffest operation anyone cd undertake', 387; Churchill thinks, will replace Sir J. French as Commander-in-Chief of British forces in France (Dec 1915), 598; and criticisms of the Somme offensive, 792; *Daily Mail* warns Churchill not to intrigue against (Oct 1916), 811-12
- Robinson, Charles Napier: reports in *The Times* (22 May 1915) on relief in Admiralty at Churchill's departure, 467
- Robinson, Geoffrey: on Cabinet mood of 1 Aug 1914, 24; dines at Admiralty House (4 Aug 1914), 30-1; rebuked by Marsh for criticism of Churchill in *The Times*, 153*n*; singles out Churchill for criticism (*The Times*, 18 May 1915), 450; Northcliffe informs of Lord Esher's strange status in France, 589*n*; and Fisher's attempt to return to the

- Robinson, Geoffrey—*continued*
Admiralty (Jan–Feb 1916), 700; instructed by Northcliffe not to support Churchill's attack on Asquith (March 1916), 737; Northcliffe defends Somme strategy to, 792
- Robley, Christopher Harrington: joins Royal Naval Division, 48, 504
- Robley, John Pitcairn: joins Royal Naval Division, 48, 504
- Roch, Walter Francis: a member of the Dardanelles Commission, 789; votes against the Government in the Nigeria debate (Nov 1916), 815*n*
- Rolls-Royce cars: armoured for use in France, 163*n*
- Romilly, Bertram Henry Samuel: marries Nellie Hozier (Dec 1915), 595
- Romilly, Nellie (*for earlier references, see* Hozier, Nellie): sends Churchill an American schoolboy howler (Feb 1916), 702
- Rosoman, Robert Reynolds: said to be 'frightfully keen to see the fun' at the Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 352
- Rothermere, 1st Baron (Harold Sidney Harmsworth): and the future of Asquith's Coalition Government (Oct 1915), 552; Churchill urges his wife to keep in touch with (Nov 1915), 587; tells Churchill he has 'emerged unscathed from Gallipoli' (Jan 1916), 688; tries to mediate between Churchill and Northcliffe (March 1916), 748, and (June 1916), 782; Churchill writes articles for (July 1916), 790; gives Churchill portrait by Orpen, 793; writes friendly article about Churchill in *Sunday Pictorial* (12 Nov 1916), 814–15
- Rotterdam (Holland): Fisher wants massive British troop landings at (Jan 1915), 245; rumours of a planned British naval landing at, 400
- Rouge Croix (France); 584; MAP, 577
- Royal Automobile Club (London): Churchill and F. E. Smith at the Turkish baths of (5 Dec 1916), 821
- Royal Commission on Fuel and Engines: Fisher appointed Chairman of (1912), 13
- Royal Commission on War Inventions (1919): and the origin of the tank, 537
- Royal Marine Brigade: and land operations, 11; sent by Churchill to Ostend (26 Aug 1914), 56; sent by Churchill to Dunkirk (Sept 1914), 67; move from Dunkirk to Lille, 92–3; forced to return to Dunkirk, 103; Churchill suggests sending to Antwerp, 105; ordered to proceed to Antwerp, 106, 107; expected at Antwerp, 108; reach Antwerp, 110, 112; Kitchener plans to replace at Antwerp by 7th Division, 113; in action at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 114, 116, 117, 118, 124; use of, at Antwerp, criticized, 126; use of, at Antwerp, defended, 128; on way to Dardanelles, 300; small party of land safely at entrance to Dardanelles, and successfully accomplish mission (1 March 1915), 318; main body of at Lemnos (3 March 1915), 322
- Royal Naval Air Service: and the needs of war, 11; units sent to Belgium, 56; air base established at Dunkirk, 65; Churchill circulates memorandum on the wartime development of (June 1915), 486; Churchill defends his policy for (Oct 1915), 561; and the possibility of an East African wing (Nov 1915), 566; 'maltreated', 690; Churchill critical of Balfour's policy for (March 1916), 735; Churchill's anger at criticism of his policy towards (May 1916), 765
- Royal Naval College, Greenwich: Bayly appointed President of, 185
- Royal Naval Division: established (Aug 1914), 47–8; recruiting for, 49; Churchill's instructions for, 50; criticisms of, 51; not ready to go to Calais, 52; Churchill proposes sending to Antwerp, 107; Churchill awaits arrival of, at Antwerp, 111; Kitchener plans to replace by 7th Division, 113; difficulties in reaching Antwerp, 115; at

Royal Naval Division—continued

Antwerp (Oct 1914), 116, 118, 120; given order to withdraw from Antwerp, 122; losses at Antwerp, 125; use of, at Antwerp, criticized, 126; Churchill speech to, on return from Antwerp, 129-30; criticism of its provisions answered by Churchill in Parliament (11 Nov 1914), 169-70; Oliver and Richmond give reason for sending to Dardanelles (Feb 1915), 279; Churchill and Kitchener quarrel over Sir John French's use of (Feb 1915), 289-91; being sent to Dardanelles, 292, 301, 304; reviewed by George V at Blandford (25 Feb 1915), 305-6; on way to Dardanelles, 316, 322; General Paris suggests landing at Smyrna rather than on Gallipoli Peninsula, 392; on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 413, 415; Churchill sends message of encouragement to (18 May 1915), 451; heavy losses of (4-6 June 1915), 496; their 'bold, martial appearance' described by Hamilton (18 June 1915), 500; continual losses of, 504; Churchill angered by rumours of abolition of (Feb 1916), 707

Royal Naval Division, The (D. Jerrold): Churchill's introduction to, 50*n*

Royal Scots Fusiliers, 6th Battalion: Churchill commands, in reserve (Chapter 20), 628-47; at Ploegsteert (Chapter 21), 648-78, 679, 684; Churchill invites Sir John Simon to do his training with, 685

Rumania: possibility of action against Austria, 200-2, 210; British financial help for, 204; Buxton reports (21 Oct 1914) on hesitations of, 213; Asquith doubts hesitations can be much prolonged (31 Oct 1914), 216, 219; not ready to join Allies (Dec 1914), 224; Asquith stresses importance of intervention of (27 Dec 1914), 225; Lloyd George wants as ally against Austria (1 Jan 1915), 229; importance of, in British plans to defeat Turkey, 230, 235, 243, 244, 249; little disposed to

Rumania—continued

help Serbia, 273; Austrian aim to overawe, 277; possibility of troops of, to help Serbia, 281-2; possibility of joining the Allies and facilitating allied advance up Danube, 302, 308; Balfour on inducements to, 305; German submarines said to be on their way to Turkey via, 338; importance to the Allies of support from, 349; German reinforcements for Turkey pass through, 371-2; Churchill fears German armies will overawe (Aug 1915), 524; and the Austrian attack on Serbia (Oct 1915), 549; German-Austrian-Bulgarian attack on (1 Sept 1916), 797; MAPS, 235, 545, 842

Rumpler biplanes (German): at the Dardanelles, 499*n*

Runciman, Walter: Churchill advocates as First Lord, 112, 113; Asquith's veiled praise for, 330; seen as ally for Asquith against an alleged Lloyd George-Curzon-Churchill plot (Oct 1915), 557; against conscription (Dec 1915), 622

Russia: Churchill proposes alliance with, 1; the crisis of July 1914, 2-3, 6, 21; Germany declares war on, 25; Churchill proposes joint action in Baltic with, 52-3; British Marines rumoured to be troops from, 56; Churchill plans for troops from, 58; naval strength growing, 178; fears Austrian naval attack on Black Sea ports, 193; Enver approaches for territorial guarantees, 196; naval and military action against Bosphorus proposed, 199; Churchill believes 'unconquerable' (31 Aug 1914), 201; asked about possibility of joint allied action against Turkey, 205; effect of closure of Dardanelles on, 213; worsening military situation, 224-5; Churchill plans North Sea-Baltic offensive to bring military help to, 226, 228; Hankey favours active participation of in war against Turkey, 230; appeals to Britain for a demonstration against Turks, 231-3; action

Russia—continued

by Royal Navy to relieve pressure on, 248; Churchill's message of encouragement to, 253; fear of a negotiated peace between Germany and, 260; cannot spare troops for action in the Balkans, 280; estimate 50,000 troops needed to capture Constantinople, 292; military weakness of, 307; will not attack Constantinople until British ships enter the Sea of Marmara, 315; Haldane fears will accept German peace offers, 321; refuses to accept Greek participation in attack on Constantinople, 328-9; and British War Council's discussion (10 March 1915) of post-war settlement, 332, 334; refuses Churchill's appeal to abandon veto on Greek help at the Dardanelles, 344-5; economic difficulties as a result of the sealing off of the Black Sea, 350; Hankey recalls (Aug 1916) moral effect of naval attack at Dardanelles on, 380; Asquith tells House of Commons (14 March 1917) of beneficial effect of Dardanelles operation on, 480; Churchill emphasizes weakness of (June 1915), 498; Hankey suggests sending Churchill on mission to (Oct 1915), 560-1; Churchill wants 150,000 troops from, to participate in Anglo-French attack on Turkey (Oct 1915), 561; MAPS, 53, 235, 545, 839, 842

St Andrew's Hall (Glasgow): 643, 681

St Gilles (Belgium): British troops take trains to Ostend from, 131

St Helena: 265

St Nazaire (France): British Admirals urge defence of, 55; MAP, 54

St Omer (France): Sir John French's Headquarters (Oct 1914-Dec 1915), 133, 163, 339; Churchill at (18-19 Nov 1915), 572-4; Churchill Sir J. French's guest at (1-18 Dec 1915), 589-95, 596-605, 606; Churchill remains at (19-23 Dec 1915), 609-21; Churchill returns to (27 Dec 1915-5

St Omer (France)—continued

Jan 1916), 622-8, 630; Churchill visits (19 Jan 1916), 643; Churchill summoned to (3 Jan 1916), 679; Lloyd George, Bonar Law and Churchill drive to, 697; MAPS, 575, 649

St Pol (France): 414; MAP, 575

Saint-Seine, Jean Charles Just Benigne, Comte de: proposes Anglo-French Naval co-operation, 18-19; keen on action at the Dardanelles, 257-8

Salonika (Greece): possibility of British action at discussed, 228, 237, 244, 252-3, 260, 274, 277, 278; War Council decide to send troops to (9 Feb 1915), 281-2, 295; Greek Government turn down offer of British troops at (15 Feb 1915), 287-8; Churchill revives possibility of allied landing at, 302, 307; Fisher wants to offer to Bulgaria in return for Bulgarian support against Turkey, 338, 382; Lloyd George wants troops sent from Gallipoli to (Sept 1915), 538; Churchill proposes action based on (5 Oct 1915), 544; Lloyd George wants British troops sent urgently to (11 Oct 1915), 550; Anglo-French force lands at (5 Oct 1915), 558*n*; Jack Churchill said to be at (Nov 1915), 582; Churchill foresees disaster at (Dec 1915), 590, 800; Churchill wants evacuation of (Dec 1915), 598, 603, 605; Asquith tries to persuade Kitchener to visit, 602; and possibility of sending troops to Gallipoli from (Dec 1915), 617; Churchill on need to use troops at elsewhere (1916), 686, 692, 772; Churchill's continued belief in need for evacuation of (March 1916), 708; MAPS, 29, 545, 842

Samson, Charles Rumney: establishes air base at Dunkirk, 65; acts in co-ordination with armoured cars, 67; reports on skirmish beyond Cassel, 68; the effect of his raids, 69; commands 'Dunkirk Circus', 74; records Churchill's views on aerial strategy (22 Sept 1914), 88; at Lille, 93; forced to return

- Samson, Charles Rumney—*continued*
to Dunkirk, 103; his squadron of twelve aeroplanes to go to Dardanelles (March 1915), 316; Fisher wants in home waters rather than at Dardanelles, 379; reaches Lemnos, 396-7
- Samson, Felix Rumney: in armoured car skirmish near Cassel, 69
- Samuel, Herbert Louis: and the defence of Antwerp (Oct 1914), 100, 119-20; favours British control of Palestine and Home Rule for the Jews there (March 1915), 343-4; present at quarrel between Lloyd George and Churchill (April 1915), 383
- Sarajevo (Bosnia): Franz Ferdinand assassinated at, 2, 118
- Saracen* (British destroyer): 339
- Sarell, Philip Charles: on effect of British armoured car raids, 69; on effect of Churchill's visit to Dunkirk (10 Sept 1914), 72
- Sari Bair (Gallipoli Peninsula): Sir Ian Hamilton's army fails to reach summit of (25-26 April 1915), 407; Hamilton confident that his forces will reach in May 1915, 411; the second failure to capture (6-11 Aug 1915), 518-21; Turks retain control of (21-28 Aug 1915), 524; Churchill wants renewed attack on (Sept 1915), 540; MAPS, 403, 519
- Saros, Gulf of (Turkey), *see* Xeros, Gulf of
- Sarrail, General: commands French troops at Salonika (Oct 1915), 558ⁿ
- Sassoon Dock (Bombay): Churchill dislocates shoulder at (1896), 635ⁿ
- Sato, Kozo: commands Japanese squadron in Mediterranean (1917), 44ⁿ
- Sazonov, Sergei Dmitrievich: 280; Grey's assurances to about Constantinople (14 Jan 1915), 320; sends Grey report (22 April 1915) of Turkish shortage of ammunition, 400
- Scharnhorst* (German cruiser): 156, 158, 182; sunk at battle of Falkland Islands, 183
- Scheldt, River: and Antwerp's access to the sea, 96-8; Admiral Oliver disables ships at anchor in, 101; Belgian army withdrawn across, 118; British troops withdraw across, 130; Churchill on German desire to control mouth of, 378
- Schleswig-Holstein (Germany): Churchill resurrects plan for invasion of (in Dec 1914), 225-6, (again on 4 Jan 1915), 236-7, (again on 11 Jan 1915), 246; Fisher wants an attack on (16 March 1915), 347; MAP, 842
- Scimitar Hill (Gallipoli Peninsula): 524; MAP, 519
- Scorpion* (British torpedo-boat destroyer): off Smyrna, 217, 219
- Scotland: Fisher announces his immediate departure for (15 May 1915), 438, 439; Hankey, McKenna and Crease act in concert to get Fisher away to (22 May 1915), 467
- Scots, the: Churchill writes 'I am a vryt admirer of that race. A wife, a constituency & now a regiment attest the sincerity of my choice' (3 Jan 1916), 629
- Scott, Charles Prestwich: reports on hostility of Lloyd George and Churchill to further offensives on the western front (Sept 1915), 541; Churchill urges his wife to keep in touch with (Nov 1915), 587; sends Churchill encouragement (Dec 1915), 596; Churchill urges Garvin to keep in touch with, 605; Fisher's attempt to return to the Admiralty supported by (Jan-Feb 1916), 700-1, 704; and Churchill's demand for Fisher's return (March 1916), 708, 709, 711-12, 713, 722-3, 730-1, 732-3; and Churchill's criticisms of Asquith's war policies, 739, 741-2, 744, 753; hears Lloyd George's criticisms of Asquith and Balfour, 755; his plans for a 'real opposition' led by Lloyd George, Churchill and Carson (April 1916), 756-7; Churchill's political hopes centre on, 759; Churchill has long

- Scott, Charles Prestwich—*continued*
discussion with (20 Nov 1916), 816
- Scott, Sir Percy Moreton: proposes use of naval guns in France, 90-1; and use of *Queen Elizabeth* at Dardanelles, 250-3
- Scutari (Turkey): 326; MAPS, 838, 841
- Sedd-el-Bahr (Gallipoli Peninsula): heavy guns of largely destroyed (3 Nov 1914), 218; damage not repaired, 219; British sailors make brief landing at (4 March 1915), 326; military landing at (25 April 1915), 405-6, 407-8; *Goliath* torpedoed off (12 May 1915), 425; Churchill advocates (13 May 1915) semi-permanent landing stages at, 428; MAPS, 353, 403
- Seely, John Edward Bernard: at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; Churchill sends reflections to, 83; joins Churchill at Antwerp, 107, 117; Churchill describes Duchy of Lancaster work to, 484; Churchill describes political situation to (12 June 1915), 495; Churchill expresses his frustration to (20 Sept 1915), 538; Churchill visits near Kemmel (2 Dec 1915), 592; presents prizes at Churchill's sports day (16 Jan 1916), 641; Churchill attends lecture with (20 Jan 1916), 643; tells Churchill of conscription debate in London, 685; Churchill writes to about politics and the Dardanelles Commission (31 July 1916), 791; Churchill writes to about Asquith's weakening position (13 Aug 1916), 798, and about the course of the war, 799
- Selborne, 2nd Earl of (William Waldegrave Palmer): Churchill sends defence of his naval policy to, 159; becomes President of the Board of Agriculture and Fisheries (May 1915), 470; believes Constantinople, if captured, could be given to Germany in exchange for Belgium, 487-8; and the War Policy Committee of the Cabinet (Aug 1915), 527, 529; agrees (Sept Selborne, 2nd Earl of—*continued* 1915) to winter campaign at Gallipoli, 539; favours conscription (Oct 1915), 556; opposes Gallipoli evacuation, 601, 617
- Senegal: French troops from, at Gallipoli, 413, 415
- Serbia: and Austrian hostility, 2; the Austrian ultimatum of 23 July 1914, 4-6; consequences of possible invasion of, 7; possibility of action against Austria, 200-2, 210; British financial help for, 204; hostile to Greece, 221; recaptures Belgrade from Austria (14 Dec 1914), 224; Lloyd George wants British military assistance sent to (1 Jan 1914), 228-9; Hankey suggest territorial inducements for, 230; danger to, if Russia defeated, 233; Fisher wants attack on Austria by, as part of grand design, 235; War Council discusses aid to (28 Jan 1915), 273-4; danger of Austrian attack on, 277-8; danger of Bulgarian attack on, 280, 281-2; Asquith believes best way to help is 'to strike a big blow at the Dardanelles', 293; Churchill wants Dardanelles army of 115,000 to be able to go to the aid of, 307; Hankey wants British naval attack up Danube as means of protecting, 318; Hankey recalls (Aug 1916) effect of naval attack at Dardanelles on, 380; Churchill fears German armies will crush (Aug 1915), 524; attack on believed imminent (Sept-Oct 1915), 538, 544; invaded by Austria (Oct 1915), 549; Churchill reflects (Dec 1915) on policy of, 597; MAPS, 235, 545, 842
- Sevastopol (Russia): bombarded (29 Oct 1914), 215
- Shcrrness (Kent): Churchill welcomes Heligoland Bight victors at, 59; provisions sent to Dunkirk air base from, 67; 15-inch howitzers being built at, 392
- Sheridan, Clare Consuelo: her husband killed at Loos (Sept 1915), 595

- Sheridan, William Frederick: killed at Loos (Sept 1915), 595
- Shipbuilder's Yarn*, A (Tennyson D'Eyncourt): quoted, 537
- Shipka Pass (Balkan mountains): Turks defeated by the Russians at (1877), 243ⁿ
- Shuttleworth, 1st Baron (Ughtred James Kay-Shuttleworth): 484-5
- Siberia (Russia): Churchill sees use on western front of troops from, 58
- Sierra Leone: *Kent* ordered to South America from, 182
- Sign Post Lane (near Neuve Chapelle, France): 580; MAP, 577
- Silesia (Germany): possible Russian invasion of, if Britain attacks Austria, 243
- Simon, Sir John Allsebrook: decides not to resign from Cabinet (Aug 1914), 27; Asquith's praise for (March 1915), 330; becomes Home Secretary, 469; attacks Northcliffe (Nov 1915), 593; and the conscription crisis (Dec 1915), 622; resigns (Jan 1916), 679, 685; and Churchill's criticisms of Asquith (March 1916), 713
- Sinai Peninsula: surveyed by Kitchener (1883), 9ⁿ; Turks believed to be laying mines off (31 Oct 1914), 217; British ships keep watch for movement of Turkish troops to, 222; crossed by Turkish forces (Feb 1915), 279; MAP, 838
- Sinclair, Sir Archibald Henry: dines at Admiralty House (5 Jan 1915), 238; Churchill sees cavalry position near Kemmel with (2 Dec 1915), 593; Churchill wants as his ADC (Dec 1915), 599, 615, 619, 620; Churchill meets at Boulogne, 625; Churchill's second-in-command (Jan-May 1916), 628, 629, 631, 634, 644, 652, 653, 657, 659, 660, 662, 663, 664, 665, 667, 668, 673, 675, 677, 678, 684, 739, 740-1, 742, 756; squadron commander in 2nd Life Guards (July 1916), 791
- Sinclair, Mrs (Mabel Sands): 740ⁿ
- Sinclair, Clarence Granville: 740ⁿ
- Singapore: dockyard mutiny at suppressed, 44ⁿ, 184
- Sivas (Turkey): Djemal Pasha records fears of Allied advance on, 212
- Sippe, Sidney Vincent: in air raid on Friedrichshafen, 172
- Skagerrak: Churchill's plan for sending British Fleet through (Aug 1914), 52; MAPS, 19, 53
- Skobelev, Mikhail Dimitrievich: at siege of Plevna (1877), 243
- Slade, Sir Edmond John Warre: advises Churchill on naval action against Turkey (31 Oct 1914), 215-16
- Slatin, Sir Rudolf Carl: one of Churchill's Austrian friends, 45
- Smith, Frederick Edwin: godfather to Churchill's son, 4ⁿ; supports Coalition on eve of war, 12; on Conservative support for Liberal policy, 22-3; at Admiralty (1 Aug 1914), 24-5; at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; writes on Churchill in *Contemporary Personalities*, 58; adds paragraph to 'Amiens' despatch of *The Times*, 70; speaks at London Opera House (11 Sept 1914), 75; Churchill anxious to see, 164; with Churchill at Constantinople (1910), 189; favours military landing at Smyrna or Ephesus, 237, 238; Churchill appeals for his help against Tory hostility (March 1915), 330; describes progress at the Dardanelles (15 March 1915) as 'too good to be true', 344; Fisher protests at Churchill talking to, 426; at Admiralty House with Churchill (18 May 1915), 455; becomes Solicitor-General, 470; Margot Asquith alleges as part of a Lloyd George-Curzon-Churchill plot (Oct 1915), 557; Churchill writes to, from St Omer (18 Dec 1915), 615-16; sends Churchill an account of Cabinet discussions, about the evacuation of Gallipoli Peninsula, 617; and the Marconi affair (1912), 523ⁿ; writes to Churchill about conscription crisis (11 Jan 1916), 684, 685; sends Chur-

Smith, Frederick Edwin—*continued*

chill news of Cabinet discussions (18 Jan 1916), 688; his visit to Churchill on the western front (30 Jan 1916), 691, 692, 693, 694–7; believes Asquith ‘firmer in the saddle than ever’ (25 Feb 1916), 708; and Churchill’s advocacy of Fisher’s return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 709, 736; and Churchill’s desire to lead an opposition to Asquith (March–May 1916), 745; Churchill urges to keep in touch with Lloyd George on his behalf (April 1916), 750–1; Churchill writes to, about Verdun, 754; Churchill circulates memorandum to the Cabinet through (Aug 1916), 791–2; and Churchill’s preparation of evidence for the Dardanelles Commission (Sept 1916), 806, 807–8; alleged to be part of a Lloyd George–Churchill–French intrigue against Sir Douglas Haig (Oct 1916), 811; and the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 821–2

Smith-Dorrien, Sir Horace Lockwood: appointed to command British forces in East Africa, the command Churchill wanted, 590, 602

Smuts, Jan Christian: 565, 590ⁿ

Smyrna (Turkey): Admiral Limpus suggests (26 Aug 1914) possibility of landing near, 198; possibility of feints at, 201; Turkish yacht blown up in harbour of (1 Nov 1914), 217, 219; Kitchener deprecates demonstration at, 232–3; F. E. Smith favours landing at, 237, 238; British naval blockade of, 321; seen as possible area of post-war Greek control, 344, 383; General Paris wants military landing at, as opposed to on Gallipoli Peninsula, 392; MAPS, 838, 842

Sofia (Bulgaria): German sailors pass through, 197; Mustafa Kemal at, 212; British reported not to want support in, 214; German financial activity in, 317; Churchill willing to go on special mission to, 512; Churchill sees as pos-

Sofia (Bulgaria)—*continued*

sible British military objective (Oct 1915), 544; MAP, 545

Soissons (France): Churchill observes fire of French artillery near (16 Sept 1914), 81; MAP, 54

Somme, battle of the (June 1916): 774; Churchill fears repetition of (Aug 1916), 791–2; Churchill critical of Asquith’s control of the War Office at the time of, 793–4

Sophie, Queen of Greece: 221

Souchon, Wilhelm: receives secret instructions from Berlin, 193; feared about to take *Goeben* and *Breslau* into Black Sea, 197; becomes Commander-in-Chief of Turkish navy, 206, 208, 209; urged by the Kaiser to hold out at the Dardanelles as long as possible, 357

South Africa, Union of: bad news from, 140; ratio of troops to inhabitants, 794ⁿ

Southampton (Hampshire): British aviators set off from, for raid on Friedrichshafen, 172

Soyer Farm (Ploegsteert, Belgium): company billets at, 650; Churchill establishes battalion headquarters at (10 Feb 1916), 663, 664; Churchill leaves (18 Feb 1916), 675; Churchill returns to (20 Feb 1916), 676; MAP, 649

Special Register Bill: Churchill critical of, in House of Commons (16 Aug 1916), 799–800

Spencer: Churchill in Paris under pseudonym of, 414

Spencer, Lord: sends Nelson to Mediterranean, 16

Spender, John Alfred: Churchill seeks to influence in favour of a clear decision about Gallipoli (Oct 1915), 555; on Churchill’s resignation speech (Nov 1915), 569

Spiers, Edward Louis: Churchill befriends (Dec 1915), 597–605, 610–11, 620, 622; Churchill visits French front line with, 624–5; Churchill unable to

- Spiers, Edward Louis—*continued*
 have on his battalion Staff, 628–9;
 Churchill writes to, about his evidence to the Dardanelles Commission (Oct 1916), 814
- Spion Kop, battle of (24 Jan 1900): 268; Suvla Bay battle compared with, 520
- Spithead (Hampshire): naval review off, 3
- Stamfordham, 1st Baron (Arthur John Bigge): at Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; reports on George V's critical attitude to Churchill's 'rats in a hole' remark, 87; reports on further disagreement between George V and Churchill, 88; misinformed of Churchill's Antwerp mission, 119–20; believes Churchill 'quite off his head', 120; on replacement of Prince Louis as First Lord by Fisher, 148, 150–1; asks Fisher when Falkland Island despatches will be published, 184; his son-in-law killed in action, 228; George V describes as 'absolutely trustworthy', 281; comments on Churchill's wartime visits to France, 425; reports on Asquith's belief that Fisher's mind 'is somewhat unhinged' (19 May 1915), 453; reports on Liberal Ministers' hostility to sending Churchill to Colonial Office, 454; and Churchill's proposed mission to the Gallipoli Peninsula (July 1915), 512
- Stanley, Beatrice Venetia: letters from Asquith to, 21–2, 23, 24, 29, 60, 71, 72, 74, 90, 95, 101–2, 106, 112, 113, 117, 120–1, 122, 124, 130, 137, 138, 139, 141, 142, 143, 144, 147, 149, 151, 152, 158, 166, 167, 173, 176*n*, 195, 196, 204, 205, 216, 219, 223, 224, 225, 228, 237, 242, 253, 255, 272, 278, 280, 286, 290, 300, 303, 306, 310, 316, 325, 332, 343–4, 360, 361, 362, 363, 366, 387–8, 410, 426*n*, 446, 447, 459, 466, 477, 480, 775*n*; Churchill refers to letters which she received from Asquith, 21*n*, 90; tells Asquith to advise Churchill to end his visits to France, 166; often
- Stanley, Beatrice Venetia—*continued*
 told by Asquith of intercepted German naval telegrams, whose existence was not known even to the Cabinet, 179; told secret code-name for attack on Borkum, 242; letter from Edwin Montagu to, 472; *for further references, see Mrs Montagu*
- Stanley of Alderley, 4th Baron (Edward Lyulph Stanley): 626
- Star*: publishes defence of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 128; praises Churchill's Dundee speech of 5 June 1915, 491
- Station Hotel (Hazebrouck, France): Churchill entertains his officers at, 647
- Steel-Maitland, Arthur Herbert Drummond Ramsay: Churchill expresses his frustration to (Sept 1915), 538; breakfasts with Guy Dawnay, 539
- Steenwerck (France): 9th (Scottish) Division artillery headquarters at, 677; MAP, 631
- Stevens, Henry Marquis: in charge of Churchill's transport at Antwerp, 108–9
- Stevenson, Frances Louise: Lloyd George speaks critically of Churchill to, 132, 159; records quarrel between Lloyd George and Churchill, 383–4; records Lloyd George's comments (15 May 1915) on Churchill and the war, 440; Lloyd George reports Asquith's cynical observations about Churchill to (18 May 1915), 451; reports bitter exchange between Churchill and Lloyd George (19 May 1915), 456; reports on strength of anti-Churchill feeling (24 May 1915), 468; records Lloyd George's distrust of Churchill (Sept 1915), 531; reports Lloyd George 'sick with Churchill' (Oct 1915), 551; on Churchill's resignation (Nov 1915), 569; and the opening of Mrs Churchill's canteen at Ponders End (3 Feb 1916), 689–9; comments on Churchill's desire for a vigorous opposition to Asquith (April 1916), 757

- Stokes Trench Mortar: Churchill impressed by, 540
- Stonewall Jackson* (British monitor): to go to Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 423; at the Dardanelles (Nov 1915), 687
- Stopford, Sir Frederick William: at Suvla Bay (Aug 1915), 518, 520, 522
- Strand Magazine*: Churchill describes (1921) his early painting experiments in, 502-3
- Sturdee, Frederick Charles Doveton: mentioned, 46, 52; suggested by George V as suitable for the Admiralty Board, 150; replaced by Oliver as Chief of Staff (Oct 1914), 153; commands British ships at battle of Falkland Islands, 183; Fisher wants Dardanelles forced by, 235; Churchill writes of as Fisher's possible successor as First Sea Lord, 270
- Suandere River (Gallipoli Peninsula): 382, 390; MAP, 353
- Submarines, British: enter Baltic, 53
- Submarines, German: fail to disrupt movement of Expeditionary Forces, 37; fail to interfere with Marine expedition to Ostend, 56
- Sudan: Churchill wants use of native labour from 'for war or for labour' (July 1916), 794
- Sudan Campaign (1897-9): Churchill critical of Kitchener's conduct of, 12; Churchill with Hugh Dawnay during, 81; Kitchener's plans for unchallenged, 312
- Sueter, Murray Fraser: Churchill sends instructions on anti-aircraft defence to, 66, 67; accompanies Churchill to Dunkirk (10 Sept 1914), 72; at Admiralty aircraft conference (16 Sept 1914), 80; and Churchill's wish for more aeroplanes at Dardanelles (13 May 1915), 428; and the origin of the tank, 534, 536
- Suez Canal: defence of, 9; Turks believed to be in a position to attack, 220; Admiral Peirse transfers flag to, 222; British cruisers in, 264; Turks thirty Suez Canal—*continued*
miles from (Jan 1915), 270; attacked by Turks (Feb 1915), 279, 281, 317; Turks retreat from, 291, 396; Russian light cruiser *Askold* joins defence of, 327*n*; Churchill proposes (16 May 1915) sending as many ships as possible from Dardanelles to, 443; Churchill advises Balfour (26 May 1915) to keep Dardanelles fleet in the safety of, 471; MAP, 235
- Suffren* (French battleship): at Dardanelles, 331; MAP, 353
- Supreme Command, The* (Lord Hankey): quoted on War Council (13 Jan 1915), 252; quoted on Churchill's 'stout attitude' at War Council (14 May 1915), 433
- Sultan Osman I* (Turkish battleship): built in England (1913-14), 191; boarded by British sailors (1 Aug 1914), 192; renamed *Agincourt*, 192*n*; Churchill offers recompense for, 195-6; sailors from reach Constantinople, 197
- Sunday Pictorial*: 552*n*; Churchill writes four articles for, 790-1, 816; friendly article about Churchill in (12 Nov 1916), 814-15; Churchill defends his Antwerp policy in (26 Nov 1916), 817
- Suvla Bay (Gallipoli Peninsula): landing at (Aug 1915), 518-21; Lloyd George wants troops sent to Salonika from (Sept 1915), 538; Churchill opposes evacuation (Sept 1915), 539; Churchill wants renewed offensive at (Nov 1915), 603; MAPS, 403, 519
- Swiftsure* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*, 265, 305; MAP, 353
- Swine: Churchill describes certain Conservatives as, 164; F. E. Smith describes the Americans as, 688; Churchill describes his former colleagues as, 693
- Swinton, Ernest Dunlop: and the origin of the tank, 535-6, 537*n*
- Switzerland: alleged breach of neutrality of, by British naval aviators (21 Nov 1914), 173-6
- Sydney* (Australian light cruiser): sinks the *Emden*, 137*n*

- Sykes, Sir Mark: explains need for a swift blow against Turkey, 317-18; on Committee to examine British territorial needs in Turkey, 391
- Sylt (German Island): possible British base, 19, 21; Churchill drafts plans for invasion of, 181; MAP, 19
- 'Sylt': War Council agrees to use as code name for attack on Borkum, 242, 246
- Syria (Turkish province): possibility of action against Turkey in, 199; possibility of feints on coast of, 200; Churchill suggests as alternative point of attack, 220; Admiral Peirse instructed to keep watch on ports of, 222; British sailors land on coast of (18-22 Dec 1914), 222-3, 279; Lloyd George wants British action against, 228-9; Kitchener sees no value in action against (2 Jan 1915), 233; French see territorial opportunities in, 266; seen as possible area of post-war French control, 344; Grey favours setting up of an independent Arab state in, 355; Balfour wants Turkish army in, destroyed before making Gallipoli landings, 389; MAP, 838-9
- Talaat, Mehmed; Churchill meets, 189; angered by seizure of Turkish ships, 193; reported probably aware of dangers of a pro-German policy, 198; argues merits of neutrality and intervention, 213; negotiates with British emissaries (March 1915), 358-9; said to be advising a negotiated peace, 395
- Talbot, Milo George: discusses Gallipoli landing at Admiralty (1 Sept 1914), 203
- Talbot cars: armoured for use in France, 163*n*
- Tank: origin of, 534-8, 810-11; use of on the Somme (1916), 809-10
- Tannenberg: Russian advance halted at (26-30 Aug 1914), 224; MAP, 842
- Taranto (Italy): *Goeben* refused coal at, 26; MAP, 29
- 'Taube': German aeroplane, at the Dardanelles, 499
- Tautz, Messrs: 579
- Teacher, Norman McDonald: Brigade Major, 27th Brigade (1916), 647
- Tenedos: British aeroplanes based on, 253, 383; MAP, 840
- Tennant, Harold John: 452, 613, 691, 763, 774
- Tennyson-d'Eyncourt, Eustace Henry William: and origin of the tank, 536-7, 705-6, 810
- Terschelling (Holland): 374
- Tewfik, Ahmed Pasha: opens negotiations for second Turkish battleship, 190-1; protests at seizure of *Sultan Osman*, 192; warned about further British hostilities against Turkey, 217
- Thames estuary: and Admiralty plans against Zeppelin attack, 8; German aeroplane flies up (25 Dec 1914), 239
- Thameshaven: Balfour surprised that Germans have not bombed naval oil depot at, 182
- Thomson, Graeme: discusses possibility of Gallipoli landing with War Office representatives (1 Sept 1914), 203; and loading of troop transports for the Dardanelles, 297-8, 313-14
- Thoughts and Adventures* (Winston S. Churchill): 503*n*; quoted, on Churchill's first day with the Grenadier Guards (20 Nov 1915), 574-6; on Churchill's near escape from death (26 Nov 1915), 585
- Thourout (Belgium): Marine reconnaissance to, 56; MAP, 75
- Thrace: 230, 303, 544, 549; MAPS, 545, 842
- Thread in the Tapestry, A* (Sarah Churchill): 120*n*
- Thursby, Cecil Fiennes: 422
- Tigris, River (Turkey): British control mouth of (Dec 1914), 222-3; proposed extension of British control over whole valley of, 509
- Tilbury (Essex): boat sails to Antwerp from, 100
- Timbuctoo: 264
- Times, The*: approves Fleet concentration, 7; praises Churchill (4 Aug

Times, The—continued

- 1914), 31; praises Churchill's formation of Royal Naval Division, 50; praises Asquith's speech at Guildhall, 62; reports British retreat from Mons, 69-70; publishes letter critical of Churchill's actions at Antwerp, 126; Churchill defends actions in private letter to military correspondent of, 131; and release of Fisher's daughter from internment in Germany, 146*n*; critical of Churchill's farewell letter to Prince Louis, 153; Marsh rebukes Robinson for criticism of Churchill's letter, 153*n*; approves Fisher's return to Admiralty, 154; Churchill's views on the minorities' question published in (Sept 1914), 202; Churchill obituary of Valentine Fleming in (25 May 1917), 227*n*; said to have disclosed whereabouts of secret base of British Battle Cruiser Squadron, 271; Churchill obituary of Rupert Brooke in (26 April 1915), 401-2; alleges (14 May 1915) serious shell shortage in France, 430; the effect of these allegations, 445; singles out Churchill for criticism (18 May 1915), 450; advocates Fisher to replace Churchill as First Lord, 452; Naval Correspondent of reports relief in Admiralty at Churchill's departure, 467; and the Marconi affair (1912), 623*n*; and 'excitement in Washington' at death of U.S. subjects (Jan 1916), 688*n*; and Enver's reflections on the Dardanelles (Jan 1916), 693*n*; and Churchill's criticisms of Asquith (March 1916), 737, 747-8; Churchill's criticisms of Somme offensive meet with no response in, 792; on the public 'relief and satisfaction' that Churchill is to be excluded from Lloyd George's Government (Dec 1916), 822-3
- Tirnovó (Bulgaria): 544; MAP, 545
- Tokyo (Japan), 42
- Toulon (France): 31
- Tournai (France): Marine Brigade units at, 73
- Townsend, Ernest: paints Churchill's portrait (autumn 1915), 708*n*
- Trépont, Felix: and the 'Dunkirk Circus', 93
- Trieste (Austria-Hungary): Kitchener rules out landing at, 244
- Tritton, William Ashbee: and the origin of the tank, 537
- Triumph* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*, 265; at the Dardanelles, 412; sunk (25 May 1915), 472; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Trotter, Gerald Frederick: 740, 758
- Troubridge, Ernest Charles Thomas: unwilling to challenge *Goeben* and *Breslau* (7 Aug 1914), 40-1; instructions (8 Sept 1914) to sink *Goeben* and *Breslau*, 206
- Troy (Turkey): Birdwood suggests an attack across the plain of, 392; MAP, 840
- Tsing-tau (German naval base on China coast): 156
- Tudor, Henry Hugh: visits Churchill at London Support Farm (7 Feb 1916), 662; takes Churchill to see British artillery bombardment (10 Feb 1916), 663-4; Churchill dines with at the Hospice (12 Feb 1916), 665; arranges artillery bombardment of German trenches (14 Feb 1916), 666-7; and an artillery mishap (26 Feb 1916), 677
- Tudor, Frederick Charles: not on Admiralty War Group, 185-6; expresses doubts about the Dardanelles operation, 388; opposes Fisher's resignation (16 May 1915), 444; Fisher proposes dismissal of, from Admiralty Board (19 May 1915), 453
- Turkey: and arrival of *Goeben* and *Breslau* off Constantinople, 40; British policy towards (before 1914), 188-90; effect of British seizure of battleships on, 193; Grey's offer to respect territorial integrity of, 195; Churchill expects (31 Aug 1914) imminent act of war by, 202; and coming of war with Britain, 203-19; and threat to British in Egypt, 220; British troops land at

Turkey—*continued*

one extremity of (7 Nov 1914), 221; British sailors land on Syrian coast of (18–22 Dec 1914), 22; Asquith reports Churchill 'set on' (5 Dec 1914), 223; Lloyd George suggests attack on (1 Jan 1915), 229; British schemes to create Balkan alliance against, 230; prospects for the defeat of, 249; Sir H. Jackson doubts that attack by ships alone can secure defeat of, 287; Churchill's outline (28 Feb 1915) of conditions for the surrender of, 315; discussion of territorial changes in, 320–2; Churchill says war against should be regarded 'merely as an interlude', 324; Fisher wants (12 March 1915) to give Bulgaria both Salonika and Kavalla—Greek towns—in return for an immediate attack on, 338; Carson's proposed peace terms with (19 Aug 1915), 523; Churchill's war plans against (5 Oct 1915), 544; Churchill argues in favour of use of poison gas against (20 Oct 1915), 554–5; its nearness to defeat in March 1915 mentioned by Enver (Jan 1916), 693; MAPS, 29, 353, 403, 519, 545, 838, 840–1, 842

Twenty-ninth Division: Kitchener proposes sending to Salonika (9 Feb 1915), 281–2; Kitchener agrees to send direct to the Dardanelles (16 Feb 1915), 288–9; Kitchener unwilling to send to the Dardanelles (19 Feb 1915), 291–3; Kitchener 'prepared to send... to the east' (19 Feb 1915), 295; Churchill makes transport arrangements for (20 Feb 1915), 297–8; Churchill wants in eastern Mediterranean (24 Feb 1915), 301; Kitchener argues it cannot be spared (24 Feb 1915), 302; decision about destination of postponed (24 Feb 1915), 304; Churchill appeals for (26 Feb 1915), 307–10; not to go to the Dardanelles (26 Feb 1915), 310–11, 312; Churchill learns (27 Feb 1915) that Kitchener has suspended

Twenty-ninth Division—*continued*

transport for, 313–14; Kitchener says it *can* go to Dardanelles (10 March 1915), 332; Sir John French wants in France as 'he did not think there would be much fighting at the Dardanelles' (12 March 1915), 339; Churchill wants military action at Dardanelles before arrival of (12 March 1915), 340; military action at Dardanelles not to take place until arrival of (22 March 1915), 363; at the Gallipoli landings (25 April 1915), 402, 408; in the fighting at Cape Helles (6 May 1915), 415; at Gallipoli, 433; without rest for two months, 504

Tyne, River: Turkish sailors reach (July 1914), 191

Tyrone (Irish county): boundary dispute of, 4

Tyrrell, Sir William George: and the European crisis of July 1914, 6–7; and defence of Antwerp, 103–4; discusses capture of Constantinople with Fisher, 247

Tyrwhitt, Mrs (Angela Corbally): 59

Tyrwhitt, Reginald Yorke: his reception after Heligoland Bight action, 59; accompanies Churchill to Loch Ewe, 82; frustrated by Navy's passive rôle, 84

Ulm: Napoleon defeats Austrians at (1805), 389*n*

Ulster: proposed boundaries of, 3; Provincial Government imminent in, 5; Churchill seeks to deter rebellion (March 1914), 32; Churchill's action towards contrasted with his actions at Antwerp (Oct 1914), 128

United States of America: Churchill orders flying boats from, 66; and Irish Home Rule, 77, 79; Italy and Greece forced to draw their grain supplies from, 350

United States Steel Corporation:

Churchill owns \$10,000 stock in, 511*n*

Unionist War Committee: and the conscription crisis (April 1916), 751–2;

- Unionist War Committee—*continued*
 not yet strong enough to challenge Asquith (May 1916), 762, 775; leads challenge against Asquith in Parliament (8 Nov 1916), 815
- Urfah (Turkey): 344; MAP, 839
- Valparaiso (Chile): news of British naval defeat off Coronel reaches, 158
- Van (Turkey): captured by Russians, 499; MAP, 839
- Vardar River (Greece): 546
- Varna (Bulgaria): Kitchener favours Russian attack on (Oct 1915), 553; MAP, 842
- Venerable* (British battleship): to sail to Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 422, 423
- Vengeance* (British battleship): to go to Dardanelles, 249*n*; at Dardanelles, 300, 331, 394; MAP (18 March 1915), 353
- Venizelos, Eleutherios: declares not afraid of Turkish attack, 206; his offer of support for Britain overruled, 221; offers Lemnos to Britain as a base, 281; his acceptance of British troops at Salonika overruled, 287; offers Greek help for Dardanelles attack, 315, 322; Churchill asks Grey to press for military action from, 325-6; his pro-allied policy rejected by King Constantine, 329; 'his hands tied' (June 1915), 504
- Verdun, battle of (Feb-July 1916): 754, 755, 772, 774, 793, 799
- Vesey, Ivo Lucius Beresford: wishes Churchill good luck in his opposition to Asquith (April 1916), 757-8
- Viceroyalty of India: Churchill said to covet, 245; Downing Street discussion of appointment to (1916), 683
- Vickers: and arms for Antwerp, 100; and building of Turkish dockyard facilities, 190-1
- Villarey, Carlo Rey de: 436
- Villeneuve, Pierre Charles Jean Baptists Silvestre: sent to sea by Napoleon, 145
- Villiers, Sir Francis Hyde: receives report of bombs dropped accidentally, 89; reports Dutch pressure on Belgium, 96; request to Grey about British help for Belgian refugees, 97; and defence of Antwerp, 100, 103-6
- Vimy Ridge: Churchill visits trenches on (Dec 1915), 624; MAP, 575
- Vladivostok (Russia): possibility of transfer of Russian troops to Gallipoli from, 205; Hankey suggests sending Churchill on mission to (Oct 1915), 561, 611*n*
- von Sanders, Liman: heads German Mission to Turkey, 197*n*; appointed to command Turkish Fifth Army at the Dardanelles, 400
- von Spee, Count Maximilian: commands German Far Eastern Squadron, 156-7, 159-60; defeats British squadron off Coronel (1 Nov 1914), 158; himself defeated at battle of Falkland Islands (8 Dec 1914), 182-4, 481; his defeat 'a risk', 262; Churchill recounts (Dec 1915) victory over, 620
- von Tirpitz, Alfred: Churchill wants to meet (May 1914), 1-2
- von Wangenheim, Hans Freiherr: signs secret treaty with Turkey (2 Aug 1914), 193; dominant at Constantinople, 197
- Vynckier, Jules-Jean: Churchill attends Mass in chapel of, 655; his house shelled, 663
- Wake, Hereward: and offensive plans against Germany, 21
- Walmer Castle (Kent): 167, 231, 245-6, 300, 329-30, 343, 361, 478, 665-6, 707; MAP, 575
- Walshe, Henry Ernest: an unpopular Brigadier-General, 630; leaves Churchill to his own discretion, 634; realizes Churchill's difficulties, 637; Churchill hopes to impress, 641; impressed 'in spite of himself', 642; at London Support Farm, 650; on leave, 661-2; relieved of command, 739; his rebuke to Churchill for 'undue leniency' in punishment, 740

- Walton Heath (Surrey): Lloyd George and Churchill 'mutually' alarm each other at (Aug 1916), 797
- War Council: meets (25 Nov 1914), 176-7, 220, 221; meets (1 Dec 1914), 180-2; Churchill wants daily meetings of, 231; discusses alternative war zones (5 Jan 1915), 237; Churchill explains air defence and North Sea plans at (7 Jan 1915), 240-2; alternate war zones discussed at (8 Jan 1915), 243-5 and (13 Jan 1915), 251-3; and British co-operation with France, 257; Fisher wants his protest against Dardanelles circulated to, 265; attracted by idea that Dardanelles operation could if unsuccessful be broken off, 267; its approval for Dardanelles operation needed, 268; Fisher announces he will not attend, 269; Fisher ordered to attend, 270; discusses Press indiscretions, 270-1; decides upon Dardanelles operation (28 Jan 1915), 271-2; favours British military aid to Serbia, 273-4; Dardanelles operations outlined to (28 Jan 1915), 275; Balkan telegrams circulated to (6-7 Feb 1915), 280; meets (9 Feb 1915), 281-2; meets (19 Feb 1915), 291-6; meets (24 Feb 1915), 301-4; meets (26 Feb 1915), 307-10; Churchill's unsent protest to, 311; Churchill helps add to self-deception of, 311; Churchill describes Kitchener's authority at, 312-13; meets (3 March 1915), 321-4; meets (10 March 1915), 331-5; Churchill rejects Fisher's proposal for a meeting of, 346; meets (19 March 1915), 354-6; not summoned to discuss advisability of a military landing on the Gallipoli Peninsula, 381; informal meeting of three members of (6 April 1915), 386; meets (14 May 1915), 431; discusses possible evacuation of Gallipoli Peninsula, 432-3; Fisher asked by Lloyd George to withhold his resignation until next meeting of, 439; Fisher insists on dismissal of Sir
- War Council—*continued*
- Arthur Wilson from, 452; Sir Arthur Wilson reported 'dumb' at, 459; Churchill to remain a member of, 468, 472; becomes known officially as the 'Dardanelles Committee' (q.v.)
- War Diary* (Lord Riddell): quoted on Other Club meeting (6 Aug 1914), 35; Churchill's explanation (22 April 1915) of why the Dardanelles must go on, 397-8; Churchill's explanation (29 April 1915) of importance of capture of Constantinople, 411; on Churchill's belief 'I am finished' (20 May 1915), 457; on Lloyd George's growing discontent with Asquith's leadership (Jan 1916), 703-4, 705; on Churchill's appeal for Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 725; on Lloyd George's criticisms of Asquith and Balfour (April 1916), 755
- Wargrave (Berkshire): 808
- Warleigh, Percival Henry: ordered to Akaba, 216; bombards Akaba, 217
- War Memoirs* (D. Lloyd George): quoted, on the coming of war, 23; on Fisher's resignation (15 May 1915), 438-9; on Bonar Law's insistence upon a Coalition (17 May 1915), 445-6; on Bonar Law's hostility to Churchill (Dec 1916), 822
- War Office: Admiralty conference with (27 July 1914), 8; Churchill submits plans to, 20; co-operates with Admiralty, 21; relations with Admiralty, 36; transfers aerial responsibility to Admiralty (3 Sept 1914), 65; responds to Joffre's request for British troops to go to Dunkirk, 73; and use of naval guns in France, 90; declares country unable to resist German invasion, 139; Lloyd George in despair over 'stupidity' of, 143; difficulty of co-operation with Admiralty, 226; and the loading of ships for the Dardanelles, 297-8; does not have enough information to plan a Gallipoli landing, 355; Asquith suggested as Kitchener's replacement at (Nov 1915), 560;

War Office—*continued*

Churchill sees Bonar Law or Lloyd George as Kitchener's successor at (Dec 1915), 622; Churchill's Parliamentary criticisms of (23 May 1916), 771-4; Churchill critical of Asquith taking charge of (6 June-7 July 1916), 793; Churchill addresses his criticisms of, to Lloyd George (24 July 1916), 794-8

War Policy Committee (of the Cabinet): 527-9

Warrender, Sir George John Scott: Clementine Churchill's advice on, 15

Warspite (British battleship): nearly ready to go to Dardanelles, 360

Waterloo, battle of (1815): Churchill believes 'glories of' revived in 1914, 141

Waterlow, H. C.: protests to Churchill against misuse of military manpower (June 1916), 776

Watson, Sir William: 146*n*

Watt, Harry Anderson: asks question in Parliament about provisions for Royal Naval Division, 170

Wattenberg (Germany): 777

Weber, Erich: orders closure of Dardanelles (27 Sept 1914), 213

Wedgwood, Josiah Clement: commands armoured car squadron in France, 68, 168; his armoured car squadron to go to Dardanelles, 316; reaches Lemnos, 396-7; sends Churchill an account of the Gallipoli landings, 408-9; wounded in the renewed offensive at Helles (9 May 1915), 415; writes of his 'indignation' at Churchill's removal from Admiralty, 483; seeks to defend Churchill's Admiralty administration, 531

Wellington, 1st Duke of (Arthur Wellesley): his Peninsula campaign (1808-14) compared with the Gallipoli campaign, 318

Wemyss, Rosslyn Erskine: commands 12th cruiser squadron, 37, 85; his appointment to govern Lemnos challenged by Grey, 298-9; in charge of

Wemyss, Rosslyn Erskine—*continued*

all transport operations at Lemnos, 348; de Robeck reports on his 'disastrous day' (18 March 1915), 357; opposed to further delay at Dardanelles (10 April 1915), 392; reported 'working very hard' (11 April 1915), 393; advocates renewed naval attack at Dardanelles (Nov 1915), 601-2

Weser, River: Churchill wishes to block German bases at mouth of, 180

Westminster, 2nd Duke of (Hugh Arthur Grosvenor): accompanies Churchill to France (16 Sept 1914), 80; his brother killed in action, 228; and the origin of the tank, 536

Westminster Gazette: 555, 569

The Wharf, Sutton Courtenay (Berkshire): Churchill's discussion with Asquith at (16 May 1915), 444-5; the Churchills frequent visitors to, 478

Whittall, Edwin: negotiating with the Turks, 359

Wilhelm (German Kaiser): 5*n*, 7; offers *Goeben* and *Breslau* to Turkey, 40; his sister married to King Constantine of Greece, 221; urges German admiral to hold out at Dardanelles for as long as possible, 357; his birthday in 1916, 653

Wilhelmshaven (Germany): German fleet secure at, 140; Churchill wants attack on, 246; Churchill refers to enormous German expenditure on naval facilities at, 283; *MAP*, 842

Wilson, Sir Arthur Knyvet: Haldane advises Churchill to bring back to Admiralty, 144; returns to Admiralty (Oct 1914), 147, 149, 153, 154; Prince Louis suggests as possible First Sea Lord, 150; receives copies of intercepted German naval telegrams, 179; member of Admiralty War Group, 185-6, 250; criticized by Richmond for supporting Churchill's North Sea plans, 136-7; at War Council (7 Jan 1915), 242; and Dogger Bank action, 261; and the naval setback at the

Wilson, Sir Arthur Knyvet—*continued*

Dardanelles (18 March 1915), 354; supports Fisher's refusal to order de Robeck to make a second naval attack without military assistance, 365-7; and Fisher's opposition to the Dardanelles, 394; Churchill suggests to Fisher as his temporary replacement (16 May 1915), 443; willing to succeed Fisher as First Sea Lord, 444; and the prospect of a decisive naval battle in the North Sea (17-18 May 1915), 449-50; Fisher proposes departure of from Admiralty and War Council, 452; refuses to serve as First Sea Lord except under Churchill, 457-8; his abilities derided, 458, 459; Churchill believes he can discharge his Admiralty duties effectively with the help of, 462, 463; Churchill fails to persuade to serve as First Sea Lord under Balfour, 465-6

Wilson, Henry Hughes: on coming of war, 23-4; demonstration to Committee of Imperial Defence (1911), 28; comments on rumours of naval offensives in the Baltic and against Holland, 400; finds Churchill 'ill and unhealthy' (7 May 1915), 414; against despatch of further troops to Gallipoli, 430; reflects on the lesson of 'Squiffs lie about ammunition', 431; at St Omer with Churchill (Nov-Dec 1915), 589-91, 592, 606; hopes Milner, Carson and Lloyd George have Asquith 'by the throat' (April 1916), 755

Wilson, Woodrow: intervenes to release Fisher's daughter from internment, 146n; interrupts honeymoon on learning of death of U.S. citizens, 688n

Wimborne, 2nd Baron (Ivor Churchill Guest): lends Churchill his house, 493; sees no immediate political future for Churchill (Feb 1916), 706, 707; at a bridge evening with Asquith, 708; Churchill tries to find Admiralty job for (Aug 1914), 775n

Winston Churchill As I Knew Him (Violet Bonham Carter): quoted on relations between Churchill and Fisher, 262-3; Churchill's excitement on learning of offer of Greek military support at the Dardanelles (1 March 1915), 315-16; on Churchill's departure for the trenches (Nov 1915), 571; on Churchill's advocacy of Fisher's return to the Admiralty (March 1916), 709, 713, 718, 731-2, 733; on Churchill's thoughts about the Dardanelles Commission (Aug 1916), 798

Winston Churchill in War and Peace (A. MacCallum Scott): 805

Winston Spencer Churchill (A. MacCallum Scott): 805n

With Winston Churchill At the Front (Andrew Dewar Gibb): quoted, on Churchill's command of the 6th Royal Scots Fusiliers, 630, 631-2, 638, 639, 642, 655n, 674, 760

Wolsley cars: armoured for use in France, 163n

Wolverine (British torpedo-boat destroyer): off Smyrna, 217, 219

Woolwich Arsenal: siege mortars being made at, 72; Balfour surprised that Germans have not bombed, 182

World Crisis, The (Winston S. Churchill): quoted—on Kiel Regatta (June 1914), 2; on the Irish crisis (July 1914), 304; on a conversation with Albert Ballin (24 July 1914), 5; on transfer of Fleet to North Sea, 9; on Fisher's delight at Fleet reaching North Sea, 13; on Grey's attitude (3 Aug 1914), 27; on Kitchener and fall of Namur, 54; on search for reassurance from Lloyd George, 55; on Churchill's visit to Sir John French's headquarters (16 Sept 1914), 80-1; on Fisher's capacity to return as First Lord, 147; on Callwell's report (3 Sept 1914) on possibility of seizing Gallipoli Peninsula, 203; on a conversation with Kitchener (2 Jan 1915), 232; on Dogger Bank action (23-24 Jan 1915), 261; on

World Crisis, The—continued

- Asquith's decision to drop Zeebrugge and continue with Dardanelles (28 Jan 1915), 270; on Churchill's decision not to resign when his desire for a renewed naval attack at Dardanelles overruled (23 March 1915), 367; on 'the hideous spectacle' of wounded men during a battle (9 May 1915), 416-17; on Kitchener's anger at learning that the *Queen Elizabeth* is to be withdrawn from Dardanelles (12 May 1915), 423; on effect of Fisher's protest to War Council (14 May 1915) that he was against Dardanelles 'from the beginning', 431; on moment of learning of Fisher's resignation (15 May 1915), 437; on visit to Asquith at The Wharf, Sutton Courtenay (16 May 1915), 444-5; on appeal to Balfour to intercede with the Conservatives (17 May 1915), 445; on Asquith's refusal to let Churchill explain Fisher's resignation to the House of Commons (17 May 1915), 447; on Churchill suggesting Balfour as his possible successor as First Lord, 448; on the events of 17 May 1915, 449; 'my hour had passed', 451; on Kitchener's farewell visit to him at Admiralty (25 May 1915), 469; Churchill's criticisms of General Monro at Gallipoli, 563*n*; on Churchill's criticisms of Jellicoe's conduct at Jutland, 777*n*; on a discussion between Lloyd George and Churchill on the German threat to Rumania (Aug 1916), 797; on the emergence of Lloyd George as Prime Minister (Dec 1916), 820
- Würzburg (Germany): Churchill meets Enver Pasha at, 188
- Xeros, Gulf of (Turkey): 327, 369, 389, 392, 514; MAP, 840
- Yarmouth* (British light cruiser): tracking down *Emden* in Bay of Bengal (Sept 1914), 139
- Yashiro, Rokurō: Churchill's welcoming telegram to, 43; Churchill and Fisher seek aid from, 157-8
- York: miners from, in Royal Naval Division, 500
- Young Turks: Churchill attracted by, 188; 'fools' to support Germany, 189; Churchill appears to abandon his sympathy for, 356; Curzon prepared to allow retention of Constantinople by, in return for peace (Oct 1915), 550
- YMCA: provide cheap meals for munitions workers, 533
- Ypres (Belgium): Marine Brigade units at, 73; front line established east of, 129, 136-7, 213; slaughter in salient of, 139; further heavy casualties at, 160; front stabilized at (Nov 1914), 224; Lloyd George fears destruction of morale by continuation of fighting at, 229; Churchill refers to 'the profitless slaughter pit of' (Aug 1915), 516; Churchill compares artillery danger on Gallipoli with (Oct 1915), 546; losses of the 2nd Battalion Grenadier Guards at (Oct 1914), 576; 6th Battalion Royal Scots Fusiliers at (Nov 1915), 631, 633; Churchill hears cannonade at (14 Feb 1916), 668; MAPS, 75, 575
- Yser, River (Belgium): battle on, 129, 137; front line at, 287
- Zeebrugge (Belgium): German threat to, 103; fears of development of German submarine base at, 162, 180; Churchill advocates capture of (Jan 1915), 241-2, 245, 246, 251, 265; Fisher opposes diversion of ships to, 263-4; Fisher describes attack on as 'unjustifiable' as a purely naval operation, 268, 269; decision to abandon plans for any attack on, 270, 271, 275, 480; to be bombarded in the event of a German invasion of Holland (end-March 1915), 374; MAPS, 99, 842
- Zeppelin: Admiralty plans against attack from, 8; H. A. Gwynne's plan to destroy, 33; Dunkirk base established to counteract, 65; aerial defences of

Zeppelin—continued

London against, 66; fear of, against Grand Fleet, 82; sheds at Düsseldorf and Cologne raided (22 Sept 1914), 88-9, 91; second raid against sheds (9 Oct 1914), 122-3; reported effect of raid, 146; Sir J. French wishes to decide timing of attacks on, 162; raid on sheds at Friedrichshafen, 172-6; drops bomb on Dover, 238-9; Churchill describes plans to combat,

Zeppelin—continued

240; Churchill alleged to be responsible for neglect of defences against, 706; Churchill decides to defend his former policies towards, 708; Fisher advises Churchill on speech references to (March 1916), 711; Churchill advocates a more active policy in dealing with, 720-1, 735; Churchill defends his policy towards, 764-7
Zuyder Zee (Holland): 374